Weakly Supervised and On-line Machine Learning for Object Tracking and Recognition in Images and Videos
Stefan Duffner

To cite this version:

HAL Id: tel-02157568
https://tel.archives-ouvertes.fr/tel-02157568
Submitted on 17 Jun 2019
HABILITATION À DIRIGER DES RECHERCHES

présentée devant
l’Institut National des Sciences Appliquées de Lyon
et l’Université Claude Bernard LYON I

Spécialité : Informatique

Weakly Supervised and On-line Machine Learning for Object Tracking and Recognition in Images and Videos

par

Stefan Duffner

Soutenue le 5 avril 2019 devant la commission d’examen

Composition du jury

_Rapporteurs_ :  
Pr. Michel Paindavoine  
Université de Bourgogne

DR François Bremond  
INRIA Sophia Antipolis

Pr. Nicolas Thome  
CNAM

_Examineurs_ :  
MER Jean-Marc Odobez  
Idiap Research Institute / EPFL

DR Carole Lartizien  
CNRS

Pr. Christophe Garcia  
INSA de Lyon

Pr. Mohand-Saïd Hacid  
Université Claude Bernard Lyon 1
Acknowledgements

First of all, I would like to express my profound gratitude to my parents who, not only gave me all the opportunities and support to accomplish this work throughout all these years, but also endowed me with some extremely precious traits and abilities that helped me to develop myself, professionally as well as personally. I also want to thank my wife who supported me all the time and always respected me and my personal choices regarding my career.

I would like to especially thank Christophe Garcia who accompanied me for a large part of my professional career. He was, and he still is, a true mentor for me. He guided me all these years and set a real example to me, both from a professional and from a human point of view. I am deeply thankful, not only for all his advice, support, and ideas on a scientific level, but also for the principles, virtues and values that he gave me and still drive my work today.

I also want to thank Jean-Marc Odobez with whom I worked for 4 years in Switzerland, from 2008 to 2012. I have very positive memories of this time and of this collaboration, and I left it behind with great regret. In fact, much of my current knowledge and scientific and professional abilities I owe to Jean-Marc.

Another fruitful collaboration has been the one with Atilla Baskurt with whom I co-supervised two PhD theses at LIRIS. This habilitation work would not have been possible without him and the professional skills he conveyed me.

I would like to thank all the persons I met during my career and with whom I had the chance to work with or the exchange ideas and thoughts. For example, Professor Oliver Bittel who supervised my first research project at the University of Applied Sciences in Konstanz, Germany, which was my first contact with machine learning with convolutional neural networks in 2002! Also Stéphanie Jehan-Besson and Marinette Revenu at the GREYC laboratory in Caen helped me with my first steps in research for image and video processing algorithms. I thank also Professor Hans Burkhardt at the University of Freiburg, Germany, for supervising my PhD work and the interesting scientific discussions we had. Also Franck Mamalet, Sébastien Roux, Grégoire Lefebvre, Muriel Visani, Zora Saidane at Orange Labs, Rennes. And at Idiap, in Martigny: Hervé Bourlard, Sébastien Marcel, Daniel Gatica-Perez, Petr Motlicek, Philip N. Garner, John Dines, Danil Korchagin, Carl Scheffler, Jagannadan Varadarajan, Elisa Ricci, Silléye Ba, Rémi Emonet, Radu-Andrei Negoescu, Xavier Naturel. At LIRIS, I would like to thank my colleagues, Mathieu Lefort, Frédéric Armetta, Véronique Eglin, Khalid Idrissi, Serge Miguelt, Michaela Scuturici, Liming Chen, Céline Robardet, Marc Plantet, Jean-François Boulicaut, just to name a few. Special thanks also to Thierry Château and to Renato Cintra, and to all those I may have forgotten – I apologise.

Finally, I want to sincerely thank the members of my habilitation jury and manuscript reviewers for having accepted and performed this task: thank you Michel Paindavoine, Nicolas Thome, François Bremond, Carole Lartizien, Mohand-Saïd Hacid, and again, Jean-Marc Odobez and Christophe Garcia.

Last but not least, I would not be able to defend my habilitation without the work of my PhD students: Samuel Berlemont (now at Orange Labs, Meylan), Salma Moujahid (now at Valeo, Paris), Lilei Zheng (now at Northwestern Polytechnical University, Xi’an, China) and Yiqiang Chen (now at Huawei, Shanghai, China). Thank you so much for your work!
Abstract

This manuscript summarises the work that I have been involved in for my post-doctoral research and in the context of my PhD supervision activities during the past 11 years. I have conducted this work partly as a post-doctoral researcher at the Idiap Research Institute in Switzerland, and partly as an associate professor at the LIRIS laboratory and INSA Lyon in France.

The technical section of the manuscript comprises two main parts: the first part being on on-line learning approaches for visual object tracking in dynamic environments, and the second part on similarity metric learning algorithms and Siamese Neural Networks (SNN).

I first present our work on on-line multiple face tracking in a dynamic indoor environment, where we focused on the aspects of track creation and removal for long-term tracking. The automatic detection of the faces to track is challenging in this setting because they may not be detected for long periods of time, and false detections may occur frequently. Our proposed algorithm consisted in a recursive Bayesian framework with a separate track creation and removal step based on Hidden Markov Models including observation likelihood functions that are learnt off-line on a set of static and dynamic features related to the tracking behaviour and the objects’ appearance. This approach is very efficient and showed superior performance to the state of the art in on-line multiple object tracking. In the same context, we further developed a new on-line algorithm to estimate the Visual Focus of Attention from videos of persons sitting in a room. This unsupervised on-line learning approach is based on an incremental k-means algorithm and is able to automatically extract, from a video stream, the targets that the persons are looking at in a room.

I further present our research on on-line learnt robust appearance models for single-object tracking. In particular we focused on the problem of model-free, on-line tracking of arbitrary objects, where the state and model of the object to track is initialised in the first frame and updated throughout the rest of the video. Our first approach, called PixelTrack, consists in a combined detection and segmentation framework that robustly learns the appearance of the object to track and avoids drift by an effective on-line co-training algorithm. This method showed excellent tracking performance on public benchmarks, both in terms of robustness and speed, and is particularly suitable for tracking deformable objects. The second tracking approach, called MCT, employs an on-line learnt discriminative classifier that stochastically samples the training instances from a dynamic probability density function that is computed from moving and possibly distracting image background regions. The use of this motion context showed to be very effective and lead to a significant gain in the overall tracking robustness and performance. We extended this idea by designing a set of features that concisely describe the visual context of the overall scene shown in a video at a given point in time. Then, we applied several complementary tracking algorithms on a set of training videos and computed the corresponding context features for each frame. Finally, we trained a discriminative classifier off-line that estimates the most suitable tracker for a given context, and applied it on-line in an effective tracker-selection framework. Evaluated on several different “pools” of individual trackers, the combined model lead to an increased performance in terms of accuracy and robustness on challenging public benchmarks.

In the second part of the manuscript, I present several contributions related to SNNs for simi-
larity metric learning. First, we proposed a new objective function and training algorithm called Triangular Similarity Metric Learning that enhances the convergence behaviour and achieved state-of-the-art results on pairwise verification tasks, like face, speaker or kinship verification. Then, I present our work on SNNs for gesture classification from inertial sensor data, where we proposed a new class-balanced learning strategy operating on tuples of training samples and an objective function based on a polar sine formulation. Finally, I present several contributions on SNN with deeper and more complex Convolutional Neural Network models applied to the problem of person re-identification in images. In this context, we proposed different neural architectures and triplet learning methods that include semantic prior knowledge, e.g. on pedestrian attributes, body orientation and surrounding group context, using a combination of supervised and weakly supervised algorithms. Also, a new learning-to-rank algorithm for SNN, called Rank-Triplet, has been introduced and successfully applied to person re-identification. These recent works achieved state-of-the-art re-identification results on challenging pedestrian image datasets and opened new perspectives for future similarity metric approaches.
# Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Overview</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Context</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.1 Computer Vision: from the laboratory &quot;into the wild&quot;</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.2 Learning representations and making decisions</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Curriculum vitae</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 Overview of research work and supervision</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.1 Convolutional Neural Networks for face image analysis</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.2 Visual object tracking</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.3 PhD thesis supervision</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I On-line learning and applications to visual object tracking</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.1 Introduction</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2 On-line long-term multiple face tracking</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# Contents

5.2.1 Introduction ................................................. 26  
5.2.2 State of the art ............................................. 27  
5.2.3 Proposed Bayesian multiple face tracking approach .......... 28  
5.2.4 Target creation and removal .................................. 31  
5.2.5 Re-identification ............................................ 37  
5.2.6 Experiments .................................................. 38  
5.2.7 Conclusion .................................................... 39  

5.3 Visual focus of attention estimation ................................ 41  
5.3.1 Introduction .................................................. 41  
5.3.2 State of the art ................................................. 41  
5.3.3 Face and VFOA tracking ....................................... 43  
5.3.4 Unsupervised, incremental VFOA learning .................... 45  
5.3.5 Experiments .................................................... 48  
5.3.6 Conclusion ..................................................... 50  

5.4 Conclusion ....................................................... 50  

6 On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects 53  
6.1 Introduction ..................................................... 53  
6.2 Tracking deformable objects .................................... 54  
6.2.1 Introduction .................................................. 54  
6.2.2 State of the art ................................................. 54  
6.2.3 An adaptive, pixel-based tracking approach .................. 56  
6.2.4 Experiments .................................................... 61  
6.2.5 Conclusion ..................................................... 62  

6.3 On-line learning of motion context ................................ 64  
6.3.1 Introduction .................................................. 64  
6.3.2 State of the art ................................................. 64  
6.3.3 Tracking framework with discriminative classifier ............ 65  
6.3.4 Model adaptation with contextual cues ......................... 66  
6.3.5 Experiments .................................................... 68  
6.3.6 Conclusion ..................................................... 69  

6.4 Dynamic adaptation to scene context ............................ 70  
6.4.1 Introduction .................................................. 70  
6.4.2 State of the art ................................................. 70  
6.4.3 Visual scene context description .............................. 72  
6.4.4 A scene context-based tracking approach ..................... 73  
6.4.5 Experiments .................................................... 75  
6.4.6 Conclusion ..................................................... 77  

6.5 Conclusion ....................................................... 77
II Similarity metric learning and neural networks

7 Siamese Neural Networks for face and gesture recognition
  7.1 Introduction ......................................................... 81
  7.2 Metric learning with Siamese Neural Networks ................. 82
    7.2.1 Architecture ................................................... 83
    7.2.2 Training Set Selection ....................................... 83
    7.2.3 Objective Functions ......................................... 84
  7.3 Triangular Similarity Metric Learning for pairwise verification .... 86
    7.3.1 Introduction ................................................... 86
    7.3.2 State of the art ............................................... 86
    7.3.3 Learning a more effective similarity metric ................. 87
    7.3.4 Experiments .................................................. 88
    7.3.5 Conclusion ................................................... 91
  7.4 Class-balanced Siamese Neural Networks for gesture and action recognition ... 92
    7.4.1 Introduction ................................................... 92
    7.4.2 State of the art ............................................... 93
    7.4.3 Learning with tuples ......................................... 94
    7.4.4 Polar sine-based objective function ......................... 97
    7.4.5 Experiments .................................................. 98
    7.4.6 Conclusion ................................................... 99
  7.5 Conclusion ....................................................... 100

8 Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification101
  8.1 Introduction ....................................................... 101
  8.2 State of the art ................................................... 102
    8.2.1 Feature extraction approaches ............................... 102
    8.2.2 Matching approaches ......................................... 104
    8.2.3 Deep learning approaches .................................... 105
    8.2.4 Evaluation measures ......................................... 106
  8.3 Leveraging additional semantic information – attributes ........ 107
    8.3.1 Introduction ................................................... 107
    8.3.2 State of the art ............................................... 107
    8.3.3 Attribute recognition approach ............................... 108
    8.3.4 Attribute-assisted person re-identification ................ 109
    8.3.5 Experiments .................................................. 111
## Contents

8.3.6 Conclusion ................................................................. 112

8.4 A gated SNN approach ......................................................... 113

8.4.1 Introduction ................................................................. 113

8.4.2 State of the art ............................................................. 114

8.4.3 Body orientation-assisted person re-identification ..................... 114

8.4.4 Experiments ................................................................. 116

8.4.5 Conclusion ................................................................. 117

8.5 Using group context ........................................................... 117

8.5.1 Introduction ................................................................. 117

8.5.2 State of the art ............................................................. 118

8.5.3 Proposed group context approach ....................................... 119

8.5.4 Experiments ................................................................. 120

8.5.5 Conclusion ................................................................. 121

8.6 Listwise similarity metric learning and ranking ............................. 121

8.6.1 Introduction ................................................................. 121

8.6.2 State of the art ............................................................. 122

8.6.3 Learning to rank with SNNs ............................................. 122

8.6.4 Experiments ................................................................. 123

8.6.5 Conclusion ................................................................. 125

8.7 Conclusion ................................................................. 125

9 Conclusion and perspectives .................................................... 127

9.1 Summary of research work and general conclusion ........................ 127

9.2 Perspectives ................................................................. 129

9.2.1 On-line and sequential similarity metric learning ...................... 129

9.2.2 Autonomous developmental learning for intelligent vision .......... 130

9.2.3 Neural network model compression ..................................... 131

9.2.4 From deep learning to deep understanding .......................... 132

Publications ................................................................. 135

Bibliography ................................................................. 141
## List of Figures

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>Classical object detection and tracking approaches</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>Tracking-by-detection</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>Illustration of classical approaches using manual feature design</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>Learning deep semantic feature hierarchies.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>Our CNN-based approach for facial landmark detection</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>On-line multi-face tracking in dynamic environments</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>Single-object tracking approaches PixelTrack and MCT</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>Dynamic tracker selection based on scene context</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>Symbolic 3D gesture recognition with inertial sensor data</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>SNN similarity metric learning for face verification</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>Proposed orientation-specific re-identification deep neural network</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.1</td>
<td>Example video frames of our on-line multi-face tracking application</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>The HMM used at each image position for tracker target creation</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>Example image with an illustration of the corresponding tracking memory</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>Track creation and removal observation likelihood model</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>The HMM for tracking target removal</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.6</td>
<td>Illustration of the Page-Hinckley test to detect abrupt decreases of a signal</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>Snapshots of multiple face tracking results</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>Graphical illustration of VFOA estimation</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.9</td>
<td>Principal procedure of the VFOA learning and tracking approach.</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.10</td>
<td>Visual feature extraction for the VFOA model</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.11</td>
<td>The HMM to estimate the VFOA</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.12</td>
<td>Example frames from the three VFOA datasets</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.13</td>
<td>Visualisation of the clustering produced by our incremental learning algorithm</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>The overall PixelTrack tracking procedure</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.2</td>
<td>Training and detection with the pixel-based Hough model</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>Some examples of on-line learnt shape prior models</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.4</td>
<td>Comparison of PixelTrack+ with 33 state-of-the-art methods</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>Tracking results of DLT, MEEM, DSST, MUSTer and PixelTrack+</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.6</td>
<td>Illustration of different sampling strategies of negative examples</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.7</td>
<td>The different image regions used to compute scene features</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>The overall framework of the proposed Scene Context-Based Tracker (SCBT)</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.1</td>
<td>Original SNN training architecture</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.2</td>
<td>Geometrical interpretation of the TSML cost and gradient</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### List of Figures

7.3 Some challenging image pairs from the LFW dataset ........................................ 88  
7.4 Examples of 3D symbolic gestures and the MHAD dataset ................................. 92  
7.5 Proposed SNN training architecture with tuples. ............................................. 95  
7.6 Graphical illustration of an classical SNN update step .................................... 96  
7.7 DTW, MLP and SNN comparison with the DB1 gesture dataset. ....................... 99  
8.1 Illustration of person re-identification in different video streams ....................... 101  
8.2 Examples of some person re-identification challenges ..................................... 102  
8.3 Illustrations of representative approaches of three feature extraction strategies .. 103  
8.4 Overview of our pedestrian attribute recognition approach. ............................ 108  
8.5 Overall architecture of our attribute-assisted re-identification approach .......... 110  
8.6 Some example images from pedestrian attribute datasets. ................................ 112  
8.7 Overview of the OSCNN architecture. ............................................................ 115  
8.8 Example images for person re-identification with group context ...................... 118  
8.9 Overview of our group-assisted person re-identification approach .................... 120  
9.1 Our autonomous perceptive learning approach. .............................................. 131
Introduction
1 Overview

In this chapter, I will first present the general context of our research on computer vision and machine learning – two areas that have been tightly linked and that I have been working on since roughly 15 years. After my Curriculum Vitae, I will give an overview of my post-doctoral research work during the last 10 years as well as my PhD supervision activities.

In this period, I have been working in two different laboratories and countries: first at the Idiap Research Institute (Martigny, Switzerland) in the team of Jean-Marc Odobez, and then, at LIRIS (Lyon, France) in the Imagine team with Christophe Garcia. In both teams, my research globally concerned the areas of computer vision and machine learning, but the context and applications have been slightly different. At the Idiap Research Institute, I have been mostly involved in a large European FP7 project and working on real-time on-line multi-object tracking methods using probabilistic approaches. At LIRIS, I continued the research on on-line methods for visual object tracking but then focused more on machine learning and neural network-based models that I have been already working on during my PhD thesis.

These two different contexts, both from a methodological and application point of view, lead to the two parts forming the technical portion of this manuscript: the first part focusing on visual object tracking and on-line learning appearance models, and the second part on similarity metric learning approaches with Siamese Neural Networks.

In the last chapter, I will draw general conclusions and outline some of the perspectives of our research.
2 Context

2.1 Computer Vision: from the laboratory "into the wild"

The research on Computer Vision has come a long way starting from image and signal processing techniques in the 1970s-1980s, *e.g.* filtering, de-noising, contour extraction, basic shape analysis, thresholding, geometrical model fitting *etc.*, that have been applied in relatively controlled conditions, for example, in camera-based production quality control systems, or for relatively elementary segmentation, detection, and recognition problems in constrained laboratory environments. Relatively simple parametric models, *e.g.* based on rules or, later, fuzzy logic or statistics, were employed to perform classification or regression and thus accomplish some basic perception tasks in a given environment. For example, the first visual object tracking approaches were based on relatively simple methods like cross-correlation or other template matching techniques [95, 123, 201] applied frame-by-frame on the raw pixel intensities, edges or other low-level visual features computed on image regions or key points (see Fig. 2.1). Motion and optical flow estimation [263, 339] as well as background subtraction techniques [141, 350, 403] have been used to include the temporal aspect in video analysis and in particular object tracking. Also various shape tracking approaches relying on parametric models (*e.g.* ellipses, splines) [179] or non-parametric models (*e.g.* level sets) [91, 271] have been proposed during that time. However, these methods showed clear limitations with cluttered background and when the tracked objects underwent more severe image deformations, like lighting changes or rotations.

In the 1990s and 2000s, the advent of effective machine learning algorithms being able to learn from examples and operate on high-dimensional vector spaces, and their combination with classical image processing techniques led to powerful methods for a variety of different automatic perception tasks, *e.g.* image segmentation or enhancement, object detection and recognition, image classification, tracking, motion estimation or 3D reconstruction just to name a few. These approaches were generally based on a two-stage procedure: first, the extraction of (local) visual features that have been designed “manually” in order to be robust and invariant to different types of noise (histograms of colour, texture *etc.*) and, second, the classifier that has been (automatically) trained beforehand on these features computed on a training data set. In online visual object tracking, mostly probabilistic Bayesian methods (Kalman Filters, Particle Filters) have been proposed [139, 198, 214, 304], which were able to perform the inference in real-time, frame-by-frame, and using robust appearance likelihood models (colour histograms, or simple shape models). This not only allowed to track one or several objects efficiently in realistic environments, but also to include the *uncertainty* in the estimation and cope with several hypotheses in parallel. Although these predominantly probabilistic algorithms required some manual parametrisation, they have been extended with observation likelihood models resulting from statistical machine learning. That means, either a classical discriminative classifier (SVM, neural network) is trained on an annotated data set for detecting objects of a specific category (faces, pedestrians, cars *etc.*) [143, 291], or an on-line learning classifier (on-line SVM, on-line
Chapter 2. Context

Figure 2.1: Classical object detection and tracking approaches: (a) background subtraction, (b) template and geometrical shape matching, (c) level sets, (d) key point and motion tracking.

Adaboost etc.) is trained “on-the-fly” on the particular object to track in the given video [68, 74, 165, 175, 206], (see Fig. 2.2). These powerful on-line classifiers have been extensively applied in so-called tracking-by-detection methods and mostly for single object tracking, where the object’s bounding box is detected at each frame (within a search window), and thus a tedious parametrisation of likelihood or motion models was not necessary, or to a lesser extent. The use of machine learning techniques for building more discriminative appearance models also led to considerable progress in on-line multi-object tracking, notably improving the performance of data association between consecutive frames. However, they are computationally quite expensive, and when the models are adapted on-line for each tracked object the complexity, in general, increases linearly with the number of objects, which is an issue in real-time applications. In the first part of this manuscript, we will present some of our previous research that addressed these robust visual on-line learning problems in the context of on-line single and multiple object tracking.

From 2012 on, the Computer Vision field has changed very rapidly with the broad adoption of Convolutional Neural Networks (introduced in the 1990s) that learn the parameters of feature extraction and classification jointly from annotated example images, and employ a layer-wise feed-forward architecture which can be effectively trained by the Gradient Backpropagation algorithm. More and more complex models have been proposed, extracting deep and semantic feature hierarchies and showing excellent performance on realistic data under challenging conditions. However, to be effective, they rely on large annotated image datasets (like ImageNet) and considerable computational resources (mostly GPUs). Also, several deep learning object tracking approaches have been proposed during the last years [242, 289, 391]. They generally follow the tracking-by-detection approach and focus on the construction of robust appearance models to track any object under challenging conditions. In this context, these learnt feature hierarchies showed excellent performance, and the availability of large volumes of annotated video data enabled further enabled to inclusion of learnt motion patterns. Nevertheless, with respect to the tracking problem, some fundamental issues remain. That is, the effective on-line learning to quickly adapt to new conditions and to be able to operate in dynamic environments.
2.2 Learning representations and making decisions

As mentioned above, in Computer Vision, classical machine learning algorithms operated on “hand-crafted”, generic features such as colour or texture histograms, Local Binary Patterns (LBP), Scale-Invariant Feature Transform (SIFT) features or dictionaries (bags of visual words), and the trained classifiers evolved from relatively simple decision trees or probabilistic methods such as Bayesian Networks to more “advanced” models based on Support Vector Machines and kernel-based methods that are able to cope with relatively high-dimensional input features vectors and that can be optimised efficiently (see Fig. 2.3). On the one hand, much research has been performed in improving the performance of descriptors and visual features, i.e. increasing their robustness and invariance to typical image noise and making them more discriminative with respect to a given classification task. On the other hand, numerous works concentrated on improving the classification algorithms. For example, by designed specific kernel functions for kernel-based classifiers like SVMs, or by structuring the models and inference in a way that better represents the data, like in probabilistic graphical models or deformable part models (DPM) [147] (see Fig. 2.3). Also, the combination of these classifiers using, for example, bagging or boosting techniques increased the overall classification performance [235, 340, 379]. In these approaches, the design of robust features is crucial and much work has been performed in

Figure 2.2: Tracking-by-detection approach. A discriminative classifier is trained on-line with foreground and background images patches (a) or pixels (b). Classical motion-based trackers have been combined with on-line learnt detectors to select the features to learn (c).

without forgetting previously acquired knowledge in the long term; and the design of models and inference algorithms of low complexity and high generalisation capacity (without the need of large annotated datasets).

Our work described in this manuscript especially focused on these aspects.
### Chapter 2. Context

Convolutional Neural Networks (CNN), based on the fundamental work of K. Fukushima [152] and Y. LeCun [228], allow to overcome this manual feature design and learn discriminative features automatically from annotated data. Using neural architectures with several layers of subsequent convolution and pooling operations (and non-linear activation functions) together with the Gradient Backpropagation algorithm thus results in a hierarchy of learnt feature extractors from the lowest (pixel) to a higher (semantic) level (see Fig. 2.4). With the advent of cheap GPU hardware and optimised software libraries in the 2010s, more complex models with many layers have been used, and these deep neural networks achieved excellent performance on image classification [161, 220] and have then been widely adopted for the majority of Computer Vision problems. Neural networks have a long history in Computer Vision, and their advantage is their flexibility in the model complexity that comes with different architectures, e.g. the number of layers, feature maps and neurons, optimised in a uniform way through Gradient Backpropagation, and especially their robustness to noise in the input data. Also, different training strategies can be adopted depending on the amount of available annotated data and the nature of the given task to perform. Classically, neural networks has been trained in a supervised way for classification problems. But, semi-supervised and weakly supervised algorithms exist as well, e.g. with Siamese Neural Networks [99, 121]. With few labelled data, a common technique consists in retraining or fine-tuning the last layer(s) of an existing deep neural network model, trained for example on an image classification problem with the ImageNet dataset [325] (transfer learning). When no labelled training data is available, one can use an unsupervised learning approach with specific neural network architectures such as auto-encoders [187] and Generative Adversarial Networks (GAN) [163] to automatically extract high-level information for further analysis. Recently, many variants of such deep neural network architectures, training algorithms and loss functions have been proposed in the literature.

However, with deeper and more complex models come several difficulties and limitations. One problem is over-fitting, that has either been addressed by specific regularisation techniques such as DropOut or DropConnect or by increasing the training dataset and semi-supervised learning methods. The lack of annotated training data is a frequent issue for many application when

![Figure 2.3: Extracting “hand-crafted” low-level features and (a) forming codeword dictionaries (bags of visual words) or (b) learning Deformable Part Models (DPM).](image)
using deep neural networks, and, as mentioned above, a common strategy is to perform transfer learning using an existing trained deep neural network model. However, in a dynamic evolving environment, for instance, with a mobile autonomous robot, one open question is how such deep and complex models can be continuously adapted and “fine-tuned” to perform optimally in new and unknown situations and conditions. How can we effectively integrate non-annotated or partially annotated data in a principal way to learn a model that generalises well? And how to learn with very few data?

With our work on semi-supervised similarity metric learning with Siamese Neural Networks presented in the second part, we tried to tackle some of these problems starting with more fundamental studies on small datasets and shallow neural network models and then extending some of the ideas to deeper CNN structures.
3 Curriculum vitae

Stefan DUFFNER, born on the 15/02/1978 in Schorndorf (Germany).

Appointment and career:

**Institution:** INSA Lyon  
**Grade:** Maître de Conférences CN  
**Since:** 1st September 2012  
**CNU Section:** 27ème section  
**Departement:** 50% Premier Cycle (PC),  
50% Informatique  
**Laboratory:** LIRIS

Professional address:

✉: INSA Lyon  
Bâtiment Blaise Pascal  
7 avenue Jean Capelle  
69621 Villeurbanne Cedex  
📞: +33 (0)4 72 43 63 65  
✉: stefan.duffner@insa-lyon.fr  
🌐: http://www.duffner-net.de

Education

2008 PhD in Computer Science from Freiburg University, Germany  
Defended: 28/03/2008 Freiburg University, Germany  
Title: “Face Image Analysis with Convolutional Neural Networks”  
Funding: Orange Labs  
Supervision: Prof. Dr. Christophe Garcia (Orange Labs),  
Prof. Dr. Hans Burkhardt (Freiburg University, Germany)

2004 Master’s degree in Computer Science (MSc), Freiburg University, Germany  
1st year: Freiburg University, Germany  
2nd year: École Nationale Supérieure d’Ingénieurs de Caen (ENSICAEN),  
GREYC, Image Team, Caen,  
Supervision Dr. Stéphanie Jehan-Besson (GREYC)  
Dr. Gerd Brunner (Freiburg University)

2002 Bachelor’s degree University of Applied Sciences, Constance, Germany
Chapter 3. Curriculum vitae

PROFESSIONAL EXPERIENCE

since 2012 LIRIS/CNRS, Imagine team, INSA de Lyon

Associate Professor

Research topics: image classification, object detection and recognition, video analysis, visual object tracking, machine learning, neural networks

2008-2012 Idiap Research Institute, Martigny, Switzerland

Post-doctoral researcher in computer vision and object tracking in the context of the European project TA2 (Together Anywhere, Together Anytime)
Team Dr. Jean-Marc Odobez

2004-2007 Orange Labs, Rennes, France

PhD in the field of object detection in images and videos using machine learning.
PhD thesis: “Face Image Analysis with Convolutional Neural Networks”
Supervision Prof. Dr. Christophe Garcia (Orange Labs),
Prof. Dr. Hans Burkhardt (Freiburg University, Germany)

TEACHING

Recent teaching activities at the departments "Premier Cycle", "Informatique" as well as "Telecommunications" at INSA Lyon :

1A PCC CM/TD/TP "Algorithms and Programming"

2A PCC/SCAN CM/TD/TP "Algorithms and Programming", "Introduction to Databases"

3IF CM/TD/TP "Software engineering" (responsible of module)

3IF TD/TP "Probability Theory"

3IF/4IF TP "Operating Systems"

5IF CM/TP "Big Data Analytics" / "Machine Learning"

4TC CM/TP "Image and Video Processing"

5TC (SJTU) CM/TP "Computer Vision and Machine Learning"

5TC CM/TP “Scientific Computing and Data Analytics”

PUBLICATIONS

See publication list on page 135.
OTHER RESPONSIBILITIES AND ACTIVITIES

Teaching:

- Responsible of the *Computer Science* module of second year SCAN, INSA Lyon (English teaching)
- Responsible of the *Software Engineering* module at the third year IF (computer science) department of INSA Lyon
- Responsible of personalised curricula (parcours aménagé) at IF department, INSA Lyon
- Member of the ATER candidate selection committee of INSA Lyon regarding the 27th CNU section ("Informatique")

Research:

- Council member of the Lyon Computer Science Federation ("Fédération Informatique de Lyon", FIL)
- Responsible of the topic "Image and Graphics" of the FIL
- Expertises for ANR (and Swiss FNS) research project proposals and ANRT CIFRE applications
- Numerous reviews for renowned journals and conferences (IEEE Transactions on Pattern Analysis and Machine Intelligence (PAMI), IEEE Transactions on Image Processing (IP), IEEE Transactions on Neural Networks and Learning Systems (NNLS), IEEE Transactions on Cybernetics (CYB), Pattern Recognition (PR) etc.)
- Co-organisation of a workshop on Deep Learning at the French conference RFIA 2017
- Co-organisation of a workshop on Neural Networks and Deep Learning (RNN) in Lyon 2018
4 Overview of research work and supervision

During the last 16 years, I conducted my research activities in five different academic and industrial research institutions in France, Germany and Switzerland. They are mainly related to the fields of computer vision, image and video analysis and machine learning, i.e. the automatic extraction, analysis and interpretation of semantic information from digital images and videos.

From 2002, I prepared my Master’s degree at the University of Freiburg in Germany, focusing on topics concerning image processing, artificial intelligence, robotics, machine learning and applied mathematics. I performed part of my studies at the ENSICAEN in Caen, France, and my master thesis at the GREYC laboratory, on spatio-temporal object segmentation in videos. In 2004, I started my PhD research on Convolutional Neural Networks applied to face image analysis, at France Telecom R&D, Rennes, (now Orange Labs), and I defended it in the beginning of 2008 at the Freiburg University. Between 2008 and 2012, I worked as a post-doctoral researcher at the Idiap Research Institute in Martigny, Switzerland, on visual object tracking and probabilistic models for long-term multi-object face tracking. Since, 2012, I am a associate professor at INSA Lyon and the LIRIS laboratory, working on machine learning and computer vision for various applications, such as object detection, tracking and recognition, and face and gesture analysis.

This rich experience from several scientific, social and cultural contexts gave me a broad range of technical capacities and knowledge under diverse points of view and approaches, from a more specific to a more general level, professionally as well as personally.

In the following, I will briefly describe our research and my supervision work and, in the succeeding chapters, go into more technical detail on the research we have conducted after my PhD thesis.

4.1 Convolutional Neural Networks for face image analysis

During my PhD [56], supervised by Christophe Garcia at France Telecom R&D, Rennes, (now professor at LIRIS) and Prof. Dr. Hans Burkhardt at the University of Freiburg, Germany (now emeritus professor), we worked on new Convolutional Neural Network (CNN) models for the automatic analysis of faces in images. Our starting point was the well-known Convolutional Face Finder (CFF) from Garcia and Delakis [156], and we proposed new neural architectures and learning algorithms for different computer vision and face analysis problems. Our first contribution [45, 47, 50] concerned the automatic detection of facial feature points (facial landmarks) in face images in order to align the face to a canonical position for further processing (e.g. for recognition) (see Fig. 4.1). Then, we proposed a novel CNN-based regression approach for automatic face alignment that did not require an explicit detection of feature points [41]. We also
introduced an original approach for face recognition using a learnt CNN model for non-linear face image reconstruction [42]. Finally, we adapted the CFF model to detect other types of objects in images, such as football players [49], cars and motorbikes [52] (participating in the international challenge PASCAL VOC 2005) and even virtual objects such as transparent logos in TV broadcasts.

The developed techniques and models show a strong robustness against noise and excellent performance under real-world conditions (“in the wild”, see Fig. 4.1), and they have then been widely used for industrial applications within France Telecom and optimised for embedded devices and mobile phones [44], which lead to three patents [53–55].

### 4.2 Visual object tracking

I conducted several years of post-doctoral research at Idiap Research Institute in Martigny, Switzerland, where I worked in the team of Jean-Marc Odobez, on visual object tracking in the context of a large EU FP7 project called TA2, “Together Anywhere, Together Anytime”. The project aimed at improving the feeling of “togetherness” of distant family members through technology, and our part consisted in developing a dynamic face and person detection and tracking algorithm operating in real-time on a video (and audio) stream in order to built a type of enhanced video-conferencing system that allows for a more engaging user experience. The main challenges in this setting were frequent occlusions, a varying number of persons to track and re-identify and arbitrary person and a room configurations as well as different lighting conditions.

To tackle this multi-object tracking and identification problem, we proposed a novel multi-face tracking algorithm based on a probabilistic model and Bayesian inference [12, 38] specifically handling the problem of long-term tracking and robust track creation and deletion, and we integrated this method in a more complex multi-modal speaker detection, and visual focus of attention recognition system [11, 36, 37] (see Fig. 4.2). As faces are often difficult to detect in such dynamic environments, we also developed an enhanced upper-body detection algorithm based on the semantic segmentation of different body parts [10]. Finally, we proposed a new probabilistic
4.2. Visual object tracking

Figure 4.2: Real-time on-line multi-face tracking in dynamic environments with an RGB camera. People may move freely in the room and leave and enter the scene. Left: The proposed algorithm tracks and re-identifies a varying number of persons over long time periods despite frequent false detections and missing detections. Right: integration in a multi-modal person and speaker tracking and identification system.

Figure 4.3: Left: procedure of PixelTrack. Pixel-wise detection and segmentation is performed in parallel, and the two models are jointly learnt on-line. Right: particle filter-based MCT approach, where a discriminative model is learnt on-line using negative examples from likely distracting regions in the scene (blue rectangles).

face tracking method [40] that takes into account different visual cues (colour, texture, shape) and dynamically adapts the inference according to an integrated reliability measure.

Later, with Prof. Garcia at LIRIS, we continued our research on visual object tracking, but on more generic methods that track arbitrary single objects under challenging conditions, i.e. moving camera, difficult changing lighting conditions, deforming and turning objects, with other distracting objects etc. In this context, we developed several original methods. The first one, called “PixelTrack” [5, 34], is based on a pixel-based Hough voting and a colour segmentation model and is particularly well suited for fast tracking of arbitrary deformable objects (see Fig. 4.3). The second one, called “Motion Context Tracker” (MCT) [6, 31], is based on a particle filter framework and uses a discriminative on-line learnt model to dynamically adapt to the scene context by taking into account other distracting objects in the background (see Fig. 4.3).

These different works on visual object tracking will be described in more detail in Part I of the manuscript.
4.3 PhD thesis supervision

My supervision activities of PhD students began in 2012 when I joined the IMAGINE team of the LIRIS laboratory and INSA Lyon as associate professor.

From 2013 to 2016, I co-supervised the thesis of Salma Moujtaahid [283] on visual object tracking with Prof. Atilla Baskurt, and it was defended on 03/11/2016. We started from the observation and hypothesis that some tracking algorithms perform better in a given environment and others perform better in other settings. Thus, we developed a method [29] that, given a set of tracking algorithms running in parallel on a video, evaluates the confidence of each tracker and chooses the best one at each instant of the video stream according to an additional spatio-temporal coherence criterion. Further, we conceived a set of visual features that were able to quantify the characteristics of the global scene context in a video at a given time. Using these scene context features, we trained a classifier that estimates with high precision the best tracker for a given visual context over time [28] (see Fig. 4.4). Using this tracker selection algorithm, we combined several state-of-the-art trackers operating on different (complementary) visual features, and achieved an improved performance. With this approach, we also participated in the international Visual Object Tracking challenge, VOT 2015, where we obtained a good ranking among many powerful state-of-the-art methods [23].

From 2012, I also co-supervised the thesis of Samuel Berlemont [90] with Prof. Christophe Garcia and Dr. Grégoire Lefebvre from Orange Labs, Grenoble. This industrial thesis was defended in February 2016 and concerned the development of new algorithms to automatically recognise symbolic 3D gestures performed with a mobile device in the hand using inertial sensor data (see Fig. 4.5). We proposed a new model and a weakly supervised machine learning technique based on a Siamese neural network to learn similarities between gesture signals in a low-dimensional sub-space, achieving state-of-the-art recognition rates [2, 22, 24] compared to previously proposed approaches, including our own method based on a CNN [33]. We not
4.3 PhD thesis supervision

Figure 4.5: Left: symbolic 3D gesture recognition with inertial sensor data from mobile devices. Right: proposed Siamese neural network architecture learning similarities and dissimilarities from tuples of input samples and using a polar sine-based objective function.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Objective: } & E_w(T_k) \\
\cos(O_{R_k}, O_{P_k}), \text{psine}(O_{R_k}, O_{N_1}, \ldots, O_{N_K})
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
R_k & \quad P_k & \quad N_1 & \quad \ldots & \quad N_K \\
NN_w & \quad NN_w & \quad NN_w & \quad \ldots & \quad NN_w
\end{align*}
\]

Figure 4.6: Left: Siamese neural network architecture learning a similarity metric in the feature space. Right: similar and dissimilar (face) pairs used for training (LFW dataset).

only showed an increased rejection performance for unknown gestures, but also and improved classification rate with a specific neural network structure learning from tuples of data samples (instead of pairs or triplets as in previous approaches) and a novel polar sine-based objective function (see Fig.4.5), which leads to a better training stability and a better modelling of the relation between similar and dissimilar training examples.

I further co-supervised the thesis of Lilei Zheng [441], defended on 10/05/2016, together with Atilla Baskurt, Khalid Idrissi and Christophe Garcia. In this work, we introduced several new similarity metric learning methods [4, 8, 26, 27], based on linear and non-linear projections through Siamese Multi-Layer Perceptrons, and applied them to the problem of face verification, i.e., given two (unknown) face images, deciding if they belong to the same (unknown) person or not (see Fig. 4.6). The first method that we proposed for training these Siamese neural network models is called Triangular Similarity Metric Learning (TSML) [4, 26] and is based on an objective function using the cosine distance and conditions the norm of the projected feature vectors, thus improving the convergence and overall performance of this learnt metric. The second method is called Discriminative Distance Metric Learning (DDML) [4] and uses the Euclidean distance and a margin to define the objective function for training the model, giving comparable performance to TSML. We further evaluated the proposed methods on the problem
Figure 4.7: Proposed orientation-specific re-identification deep neural network. *Left:* in the first step, the two neural network branches are pre-trained separately on identity labels and body orientations (supervised learning). *Right:* in the second step, the whole neural network is fine-tuned for person re-identification (triplet learning with hard negative selection).

of speaker verification (i.e. audio signals) and also achieved state-of-the-art results. Finally, we applied our TSML algorithm on kinship verification [25], i.e. verifying parent-child relationships in images, and participated in an international competition organised at the FG conference in 2015, and our approach was ranked first in one of the sub-competitions and second in the other one.

From 2015 to 2018, I co-supervised the thesis of Yiqiang Chen [116] together with Prof. Atilla Baskurt and Jean-Yves Dufour from Thales ThereSIS Lab, Paris, and it was defended on the 12/10/2018. The topic of the thesis was “person re-identification in images with Deep Learning”, which is a similar problem to the above-mentioned face verification, i.e. given two images of (unknown) persons (pedestrians), e.g. coming from different cameras, we want to know if they belong to the same person or not. Because the identities of the persons are generally not known before building the model and because we want the method to be as generic as possible, we tackled this problem with a similarity metric learning approach, as is commonly done in the literature. To this end, we proposed several deep learning-based approaches, where the similarity learning is generally performed with a variant of the Siamese neural network using *triplets* of examples instead of pairs, i.e. one reference example (or anchor), one similar example and one dissimilar example.

First, we developed a CNN-based discriminative algorithm to automatically recognise pedestrian attributes, i.e. semantic mid-level descriptions of persons, such as gender, accessories, clothing etc. [15]. These attributes are helpful to describe characteristics that are invariant to pose and viewpoint variations. Then we combined this model with another CNN trained for person identification, and the two branches are fine-tuned for the final person re-identification task [20]. Secondly, among the challenges, one of the most difficult is the variation under different viewpoints. To deal with this issue, we propose an orientation-specific deep neural network [17] (see Fig. 4.7), where one branch performs body orientation regression and steers another branch that learns separate orientation-specific layers. The combined orientation-specific CNN feature representations are then used for the final person re-identification task. Further, developed an-
other approach to include visual context into the re-identification process [16], *i.e.* for a given person query image, we additionally used the image region of the surrounding persons to compute a pairwise combined distance measure based on an location-invariant group feature representation. Finally, as a fourth contribution in this thesis, we proposed a novel listwise loss function taking into account the order in the ranking of gallery images with respect to different probe images [18]. Further, an evaluation gain-based weighting is introduced in the loss function to directly optimise the evaluation measures of person re-identification.

Currently, there are four ongoing PhD theses at LIRIS that I actively co-supervise:

- Paul Compagnon, “Prédiction de routines situationnelles dans l’activité des personnes fragiles”, co-supervision with Christophe Garcia (LIRIS) and Grégoire Lefebvre (Orange Labs Grenoble),
- Thomas Petit, “Reconnaissance faciale à large échelle dans des collections d’émissons de télévision”, co-supervision with Christophe Garcia (LIRIS) and Pierre Letessier (Institut National de l’Audiovisuel),
- Guillaume Anoufa, “Reconnaissance d’objets intrus en phase de vol hélicoptère par Apprentissage Automatique”, co-supervision with Christophe Garcia (LIRIS) and Nicolas Bélanger (Airbus Helicopters)
- Ruiqi Dai, “ Apprentissage autonome pour la vision intelligente”, co-supervision with Véronique Eglin (LIRIS) and Mathieu Guillermin (Institut Catholique de Lyon)
PART I

On-line learning and applications to visual object tracking
5 Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments

5.1 Introduction

Visual object tracking consists in following a given object in an image sequence or video over time. The object to follow is usually given, the first time it is visible in the video, by a human or an automatic detection algorithm. If a detection algorithm is used, applying it to every frame of the video is generally not an acceptable or sufficient solution as the object may not always be detected, false detections may occur, previous detections are not taken into account such that a certain continuity is lacking and, finally, running the detector may be computationally too expensive. The output of tracking algorithms is a description of the state of the object at each point in time in the video. This can be its position and scale in the image (usually described as a bounding box), or a “real-world” position (2D on the ground plane, or 3D), but also its orientation, speed or a finer description such as a parametric shape or part-based model.

Tracking can be performed off-line or on-line. In off-line tracking, the entire video is available at once for analysis and inference, whereas in on-line tracking, a video stream is analysed sequentially from the beginning, i.e. at each point in time only the past and present information can be used to estimate the object state but not the future. We will only consider on-line tracking in this work.

Finally, an important aspect of tracking algorithms concerns the number of objects to track. If we know that there is only one object to track, and it is visible throughout the whole video, Single Object Tracking (SOT) approaches are used. In that case, the algorithm is given the state (e.g. the bounding box) of the object in the beginning, and it is supposed to track it until the end. We will come back to SOT in chapter 6. In Multiple Object Tracking (MOT), several objects (usually of the same category) are to be followed in an image sequence, and state-of-the-art tracking algorithms mostly rely on a separate object detector trained (off-line) for the given category of objects to track (e.g. a person, face or car detector).

This presents a certain number of inherent challenges:

- in most applications, the number of visible objects is not known a priori, and the algorithm needs to handle newly arriving and disappearing objects,
- objects may occlude each other partially or completely,
- the object detector may miss objects, and false detections may occur,
- the algorithm may confuse two objects, e.g. when they come close to each other (track ID switch).
Chapter 5. Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments

Figure 5.1: Example video frames from the considered application; dataset 1 and 2 (top), and 3 (bottom). Faces may be difficult to detect, and occlusions can occur requiring an effective mechanism to remove and reinitialise tracks.

The linking of new detections to existing tracked objects is called “data association”. The above-mentioned difficulties become more or less problematic depending on the given application context.

In our previous research, we worked on both SOT and MOT and made contributions for different scientific challenges of each of them. In the following, I will first present our work at Idiap Research Institute with Jean-Marc Odobez on multiple face tracking, where we introduced an original algorithm for long-term tracking by defining a framework for robust track creation and removal in MOT, as well as work performed with Christophe Garcia on an unsupervised incremental learning algorithm for estimating the visual focus of attention of a person in a video. Our contributions to SOT with different on-line learning approaches will be presented in chapter 6.

5.2 On-line long-term multiple face tracking

5.2.1 Introduction

The work described in the following has been performed at Idiap with Jean-Marc Odobez in the context of a large European FP7 project called TA2, where we tried to improve group-to-group communication using different technological approaches. The given context corresponds to a type of video-conferencing application where people interact with each other using a touch-table (e.g., playing a game) (see Fig. 5.1). In this setting, multiple faces need to be tracked robustly, in real-time and over long periods of time. This is a rather unconstrained and dynamic environment as people may enter and leave at any moment, and the room and person configuration is not fixed, i.e., people might be relatively far from the camera, and frequent occlusions may occur. An additional challenge for face tracking here is that the participants do not always look into the camera, and their attention might be on the touch-table or on another person in the room.

The most straightforward approach for solving the face tracking problem is to employ a face detector (e.g., [379]). However, despite much progress in recent years on multi-view face
5.2. On-line long-term multiple face tracking
detection, these methods are mostly employed in scenarios where people predominantly look
towards the camera. As we demonstrate in our results, this is not sufficient for more complex
scenarios, where faces are missed around 30 – 40% of the time due to less common head poses.
Unfortunately, the difficult head postures can last for relatively long periods of time (up to
one minute in some of our videos). This means that face detection algorithms have to be
complemented by robust tracking approaches; not only to interpolate detection results or filter
out spurious detection, as is often assumed, but also to allow head localisation over extended
periods of time.

Numerous multiple faces tracking methods have been proposed in the literature (e.g. [93,
142, 269, 304, 405]), mainly focusing on new features, new multi-cue fusion mechanisms, better
dynamics or adaptive models for instance [58, 74, 164, 326], and results are demonstrated mostly
on short sequences [58, 74, 164, 326].

However, very few of them address track initialisation and termination, especially in terms
of performance evaluation. A face detector is often used to initialise new tracks, but how to
cope with its uncertain output? A high confidence threshold may lead to missing an early
track initialisation. Conversely, with a low threshold false tracks are likely to occur. Track
termination can be even more difficult. How do we know at each point in time if a tracker is
operating correctly? This is an important issue in practice, especially since an incorrect failure
detection can lead to losing a person track for a long time until the detector finds the face again.

5.2.2 State of the art

Many existing MOT approaches operate off-line, i.e. the information from the entire video is
available for the inference, or sometimes these methods are applied on sliding time windows
in order to allow for a “pseudo”-on-line operation. In most of these works, data association is
formulated as a global optimisation problem on a graph-based representation [88, 102, 181, 281,
309, 433]. However, these off-line algorithms are not suited for the real-time on-line setting that
we investigated here.

In on-line MOT, existing approaches either employ deterministic methods for data associa-
tion [75, 215] based on the Hungarian algorithm [286] or on a greedy approach [98] or probabilistic
methods, like the traditional Multiple Hypothesis Tracker (MHT) [317], the Joint Probabilistic
Data Association Filter (JPDAF) [149], both based on a Kalman Filter framework, and Particle
Filter-based techniques [185, 202, 214, 295, 297, 412].

Most of these methods do not explicitly incorporate mechanisms for track creation and
deletion, especially with longer periods of missed detections and frequent false detections, as
is the case in the application scenario that is considered here. Principled methods exist to
integrate track creation and termination within the tracking framework, for example Reversible-
Jump Markov Chain Monte Carlo (RJ-MCMC) [214, 417]. But to be effective, they require
appropriate global scene likelihood models involving a fixed number of observations (independent
from the number of objects), and these are difficult to build in multi-face tracking applications.

Kalal et al. [205] present an interesting approach for failure detection in visual object tracking
that is based on the idea that a correctly tracked target can be tracked backwards in time.
Unfortunately, the backward tracking greatly increases the overall computational complexity
(by a factor that is linear in the backward depth). In a particle filter tracking framework,
another solution is to directly model a failure state as a random variable within the probabilistic
model [310]. However, this increases the complexity of the model and thus the inference, and it
is difficult, in practice, to model the distribution of a failure state or failure parameters. Closer
to our work, Dockstader et al. [137] proposed to detect failure states in articulated human body
tracking using a Hidden Markov Model (HMM). However, their method differs significantly from ours: they only use one type of observation (the state covariance estimate) which in our case proves to be insufficient for assessing tracking failure; their observation are quantised to use a standard discrete multinomial likelihood model, whereas our method learns these likelihoods in a discriminative fashion; and their HMM structure (number of states, connections) is specifically designed for their articulated body tracking application.

In applications that are similar to ours, the problem of deciding when to stop tracking a face is usually solved in a recursive manner. This means, assessing tracking failure is often left to the (sudden) drop of objective or likelihood measures which are not easy to control in practice [279, 280].

In many scenarios of interest, the camera is fixed, and due to the application and the room configuration, people in front of the camera tend to behave similarly over long periods of time. However, most of the existing tracking methods ignore this long-term information, as they concentrate on video clips that are often not longer than a minute. Or if they use long-term information, it is mainly for constructing stable appearance models of tracked objects [200, 428], e.g. by working at different temporal scales [364]. Similarly, some methods [74, 203] train an (object-specific) detector online, during tracking, to make it more robust to short-term and long-term appearance changes. However this increases the computational complexity, because a separate model has to be built for each person, and each such detector has to be applied on the input frames. Mikami et al. [279] introduced the Memory-based Particle Filter where a history of past states (and appearances [280]) is maintained and used to sample new particles. However, they only addressed single, near-frontal face tracking, in high resolution videos and only evaluated the method on 30 to 60-second video clips. Other works (e.g. [221, 249, 347]) tackle the problem of long-term person tracking by analysing the statistics of features from shorter tracks (tracklets), and by proposing methods to effectively associate them. These algorithms are different from ours as they process the data off-line, i.e. the observations at each point in time are known in advance, and they mainly deal with tracking the position of the full human body as opposed to just faces. Another approach for multiple pedestrian tracking [86] associates smaller tracklets on-line and in a statistical sampling framework but no principled mechanism for starting and ending tracks is proposed. Recently, and after our work, an approach similar to ours from Xiang et al. [407] has been proposed, using Markov Decision Processes and reinforcement learning for data association, and to decide on track deletion.

In the following, we will first introduce the principal framework and equations for MOT with particle filters and Markov Chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) sampling, and then describe our contributions related to the probabilistic framework of track creation and removal, long-term static and dynamic observation models as well as experimental results [12, 38].

### 5.2.3 Proposed Bayesian multiple face tracking approach

We tackle the problem of multi-face tracking in a recursive Bayesian framework. Assuming we have the observations $Y_{1:t}$ from time 1 to $t$, we want to estimate the posterior probability distribution over the state $\tilde{X}_t$ at time $t$:

$$p(\tilde{X}_t | Y_{1:t}) = \frac{1}{C} p(Y_t | \tilde{X}_t) \times \int_{\tilde{X}_{t-1}} p(\tilde{X}_t | \tilde{X}_{t-1}) p(\tilde{X}_{t-1} | Y_{1:t-1}) d\tilde{X}_{t-1},$$

where $C$ is a normalisation constant. As closed-form solutions are usually not available in practice, this estimation is implemented using a particle filter with a Markov Chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) sampling scheme [214]. The main elements of the model are described below.
5.2. On-line long-term multiple face tracking

5.2.3.1 State space

We use a multi-object state space formulation, with our global state defined as \( \tilde{X}_t = (X_t, k_t) \), where \( X_t = \{X_{i,t}\}_{i=1..M} \) and \( k_t = \{k_{i,t}\}_{i=1..M} \). The variable \( X_{i,t} \) denotes the state of face \( i \), which comprises the position, speed, scale and eccentricity (i.e. the ratio between height and width) of the face bounding box. Each \( k_{i,t} \) denotes the status of face \( i \) at time \( t \), i.e. \( k_{i,t} = 1 \) if the face is visible at time \( t \), and \( k_{i,t} = 0 \) otherwise. Finally, \( M \) denotes the maximum number of faces visible at a current time step.

5.2.3.2 State Dynamics

The overall state dynamics, used to predict to current state from the previous one, is defined as:

\[
p(X_{t+1}|\tilde{X}_{t}) \propto p_0(X_t|k_t) \prod_{i \in \{1..M\}|k_{i,t}=1} p(X_{i,t}|X_{i,t-1}),
\]

that is the product of an interaction prior \( p_0 \) and of the dynamics of each individual face that is visible at iteration \( t \) like in tracking methods for a fixed number of targets [214]. Note that this is actually feasible since the creation and deletion of targets are defined outside the filtering step (see next section). The position and speed components of the visible faces are described by a mixture of a first-order auto-regressive model \( p_a \) and a uniform distribution \( p_u \), i.e., if \( x \) denotes a position and speed component vector, we have: \( p(x_{i,t}|x_{i,t-1}) = \alpha p_a(x_{i,t}|x_{i,t-1}) + (1 - \alpha) p_u(x_{i,t}|x_{i,t-1}) \), with \( p_a(x_{i,t}|x_{i,t-1}) = N(Ax_{i,t-1}; 0, \Sigma) \), and \( p_u(x_{i,t}|x_{i,t-1}) = c \) with \( c \) being a constant allowing for small “jumps” coming from face detection proposals (see Eq. 5.8). A first order model with steady-state is used for the scale and eccentricity parameters. If \( x \) denotes one such component: \( (x_t - SS) = N(a(x_{i,t-1} - SS); 0, \sigma_{SS}) \), where \( SS \) denotes the steady-state value. The steady-state values for scale and eccentricity are updated only when a detected face is associated with the face track and at a much slower pace compared to the frame-to-frame dynamics.

The interaction prior \( p_0 \) is defined as

\[
p_0(X_t|k_t) = \prod_{\{i,j\} \in \mathcal{P}} \phi(X_{i,t}, X_{j,t}) \propto \exp \left\{ -\lambda_g \sum_{\{i,j\} \in \mathcal{P}} g(X_{i,t}, X_{j,t}) \right\},
\]

preventing targets to become too close to each other. The set \( \mathcal{P} \) consists of all possible pairs of objects that are visible. The penalty function \( g(X_{i,t}, X_{j,t}) = \frac{2a(B_i \cap B_j)}{a(B_i) + a(B_j)} \) is the intersection area as a fraction of the average area of the two bounding boxes \( B_i \) and \( B_j \) defined by \( X_{i,t} \) and \( X_{j,t} \), where \( a(\cdot) \) denotes the area operator. The factor \( \lambda_g \) controls the strength of the interaction prior (set to 5 in our experiments).

5.2.3.3 Observation Likelihood

As a trade-off between robustness and computational complexity, we employ a relatively simple but effective observation likelihood for tracking. Another model could be used as well.

Given our scenario, we assume that the face observations \( Y_{i,t} \) are conditionally independent given the state, leading to an observation likelihood defined as the product of the visible individual faces likelihoods:

\[
p(Y_t|\tilde{X}_t) = \prod_{i|k_{i,t}=1} p(Y_{i,t}|X_{i,t}).
\]
Note that we did not include a partial (or full) overlap model in the likelihood component, nor any other contextual tracking techniques [414]. Strong overlaps are prevented explicitly by the interaction term (Eq. 5.3) in the dynamics. This approach is appropriate for our scenarios (teleconference, HCI/HRI), where continuous partial face occlusions happen only rarely. More often, faces are occluded by other body parts that are not followed by the tracker, like a person’s hand, or another person’s body crossing in front. Even a joint likelihood model would not handle these cases. Thus, for longer full occlusions, our strategy is to have the algorithm remove the track of the occluded face, and restart it afterwards as soon as possible.

The observation model for a face \( i \) is based on \( R = 6 \) HSV colour histograms \( Y_{i,t} = [h(r, X_{i,t})] \) \((r = 1..R)\), that are computed on the face region described by the state \( X_{i,t} \). They are compared to histogram models \( h^*_{i,t}(r) \), to define the observation likelihood for a tracked face as follows:

\[
p(Y_{i,t} | X_{i,t}) \propto \exp(-\lambda_D \sum_{r=1}^{6} (D^2[h^*_{i,t}(r), h(r, X_{i,t})]) - D_0), \tag{5.5}
\]

where \( D \) denotes the Euclidean distance, \( \lambda_D = 20 \), and \( D_0 \) is a constant offset defining the distance at which the likelihood in Eq. (5.5) gives 1.0. More precisely, we divided the face into three horizontal bands and in each band computed two normalised histograms with two different levels of quantisation. Specifically, we used the scheme proposed in [304] which decouples coloured pixels (put into \( N_b \times N_b \) HS bins) from grey-scale pixels (\( N_b \) separate bins) and applied it with two different quantisation levels, \( N_b = 8 \) and \( N_b = 4 \) bins per channel. This choice of semi-global multi-level histograms results from a compromise between speed, robustness to appearance variations across people as well as head pose variations for individuals, and a well conditioned likelihood, i.e. peaky enough to accept a well identified optimum, but with a smooth basin of attraction towards this optimum, adapted to low sampling strategies.

The histogram models of one face are initialised when a new target is added to the tracker. Furthermore, to improve the tracker’s robustness to improper initialisation and changing lighting conditions, they are updated whenever a detected face is associated with the given face track (see below):

\[
h^*_{i,t}(r) = (1 - \epsilon)h^*_{i,t-1}(r) + \epsilon h^d_{i,t}(r) \quad \forall r , \tag{5.6}
\]

where \( h^d_{i,t} \) denotes the histograms from the detected face region, and \( \epsilon \) is the update factor (set to 0.2 in our experiments).

### 5.2.3.4 Tracking algorithm

At each time instant, the tracking algorithm proceeds in two main stages: first, recursively estimate the states of the currently visible faces relying on the model described above and solved using an MCMC sampling scheme. Second, make a decision on adding a new face or on deleting currently tracked faces. This second stage is described in Section 5.2.4. The MCMC sampling scheme allows for efficient sampling in this high-dimensional state space of interacting targets, and follows the method described in [214].

Let \( N \) be the total number of particles and \( N_{bi} \) the number of “burn-in” particles. At each tracking iteration, we do:

1. initialise the MCMC sampler at time \( t \) with the sample \( \tilde{X}^{(0)}_t \) obtained by randomly selecting a particle from the set \( \{\tilde{X}^{(s)}_{t-1}, s = (N_{bi} + 1) \ldots N\} \) at time \( t - 1 \) and sample the state of every visible target \( i \) using the dynamics \( p(X_{i,t} | X_{i,t-1}) \) (deleted targets are ignored);
5.2. On-line long-term multiple face tracking

2. sample iteratively $N$ particles from the posterior distribution of (5.1) using the Metropolis-Hastings algorithm:

(a) sample a new particle $\tilde{X}_t'$ from a proposal distribution $q(\tilde{X}_t' | \tilde{X}_t^{(s)})$ (described below);

(b) compute the acceptance ratio:

$$a = \min\left(1, \frac{p(\tilde{X}_t' | Y_{1:t}) q(\tilde{X}_t^{(s)} | \tilde{X}_t')}{p(\tilde{X}_t^{(s)} | Y_{1:t}) q(\tilde{X}_t' | \tilde{X}_t^{(s)})}\right)$$  

(5.7)

(c) accept the particle (i.e. define $\tilde{X}_t^{(s+1)} = \tilde{X}_t'$) with probability $a$. Otherwise, add the old particle (i.e. set $\tilde{X}_t^{(s+1)} = \tilde{X}_t^{(s)}$)

After time step $t$, the particle set $\{\tilde{X}_t^{(s)}\}_{s=N_{bi}+1}^N$ represents an estimation of the posterior $p(\tilde{X}_t | Y_{1:t})$.

The proposal function $q(\cdot)$ allows for selecting good candidates for the particle set. Efficiency in MCMC sampling is obtained by modifying object states one at a time. More precisely, a new sample is selected by letting $\tilde{X}_t' = \tilde{X}_t^{(s)}$, randomly select a face $i$ amongst the visible ones, and then sample the proposed state $X_{i,t}'$ of face $i$ from:

$$q(X_{i,t}' | \tilde{X}_t) = \left[ (1 - \alpha) \frac{1}{N - N_{bi}} \sum_r p(X_{i,t}' | X_{i,t-1}^{(s)}) + \alpha p(X_{i,t}' | X_{d,t}^d) \right]$$  

(5.8)

that is a mixture of the state dynamics (ensuring temporal smoothness) and the output of a face detector (avoiding tracker drift) controlled by the factor $\alpha$, where $X_{d,t}^d$ denotes the state of the closest detection coming from a face detector [379] and associated with face $i$. Again, targets removed at the previous step are ignored, while recently added targets are simply sampled around their initial position.

5.2.4 Target creation and removal

The way objects are added and removed from the tracker is a key feature of the algorithm that we proposed. In our application scenario, the goal is to avoid false alarms as much as possible. This means, the tracker should be able to detect as quickly as possible if there is a tracking failure. On the other hand, it should not stop tracking when there is no failure since it may take a long time until the object is detected again.

We proposed to use two different Hidden Markov Models (HMM) for that purpose, as described in the following sections. One is used for object creation and the other for object removal. Each of them receives different types of observations.

A face detector (for both frontal and profile views) is called every 10 frames (i.e. around twice per second, as our algorithm is able to process around 20-23 frames/s in real-time). The HMMs are updated only at these instants, but rely on observations computed on all frames since the last update. According to our experiments, applying the detector to every video frame did not significantly improve the tracking performance and considerably slowed down the algorithm.

Before the creation and removal step, each detection is associated to a track provided the following conditions hold:

1. the detection is not associated with any other target,
2. it has the smallest distance to the tracked target,
Chapter 5. Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments

Figure 5.2: The HMM used at each image position for tracker target creation. The variable $c_t$ indicates a face centred at a particular image position. The probability of $c_t$ is estimated recursively using the observations $o_{t,1}^c \ldots o_{t,N_c}^c$.

3. the distance between detection and target is smaller than two times the average width of their bounding boxes,

4. the two bounding boxes overlap.

Although a more generic way would be to use training data to learn the association rules and parameters as done in [322], for instance, the above conditions work well for our data in the large majority of cases.

In the following, we describe the HMMs for target creation and removal. Note that naturally, only un-associated detections are considered for the initialisation of a new target.

5.2.4.1 Creation

When initialising a new target we have two objectives: first, minimise erroneous initialisations due to false detections, and second, initialise correct targets as early as possible.

For deciding when to add new targets to the face tracker, we propose a simple HMM that estimates the probability of a hidden, discrete variable $c_t(i,j)$ indicating at each image position $(i,j)$ if there is a face or not at this position. Figure 5.2 illustrates the model. In the following, we drop the indices $(i,j)$ for clarity. Let us denote by $O_{t}^c = [o_{t,1}^c, \ldots, o_{t,N_c}^c]$ the set of $N_c$ observations at each time step $t$, and by $O_{1:t}^c = [O_1^c, \ldots, O_t^c]$ the sequence of observations from time 1 to time $t$. Assuming the transition matrix is defined as: $p(c_t|c_{t-1}) = 1$ iff $c_t = c_{t-1}$ and 0 otherwise, the posterior probability of the state $c_t$ can be recursively estimated as:

$$ p(c_t = s|O_{1:t}^c) = \frac{p(O_t^c|c_t = s) p(c_t-1 = s|O_{1:t-1}^c)}{\sum_{s'} p(O_t^c|c_t = s') p(c_t-1 = s'|O_{1:t-1}^c)}. $$  (5.9)

where

$$ p(O_t^c|c_t) = \prod_{i=1}^{N_c} p(o_{t,i}^c|c_t). $$  (5.10)

Track creation: for each detected face that is not associated with any current face target, we decide whether a track is created or not. To this end, if $(i,j)$ denotes the centre position of the face detection, the ratio:

$$ r_t^c(i,j) = \frac{p(c_t(i,j) = 1|O_{1:t}^c(i,j))}{p(c_t(i,j) = 0|O_{1:t}^c(i,j))} $$  (5.11)

is computed. If $r_t^c(i,j) > 1$, then a new track is initialised at $(i,j)$. Otherwise, no track is created from the given detection.
5.2. On-line long-term multiple face tracking

Figure 5.3: Example image (left) with an illustration of the corresponding tracking memory (right) during tracking. Qualitatively speaking, track creation will be faster (almost immediate) when a new face detection is observed in the “white” regions whereas repetitive detection will be needed to initiate a track in a “black” region. Similarly, when an object track moves to black regions, its failure probability will become higher. See text for details.

Observations and likelihood models: we propose to use two different types of observations: $o_{c,1}^t$, the output of the face detector and $o_{c,2}^t$, a long-term “memory” of the states (i.e. positions) of tracked faces $X_t$.

The first observation is defined as follows. At time $t$ and image position $(i, j)$ we set:

$$o_{c,1}^t = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } (i, j) \text{ is covered by one of the bounding boxes of the detected faces,} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

The likelihood of the first observation is then defined as

$$p(o_{c,1}^t = 0 | c_t = 0) = 1 - f_a, \quad p(o_{c,1}^t = 1 | c_t = 0) = f_a,$$

$$p(o_{c,1}^t = 0 | c_t = 1) = m_d, \quad p(o_{c,1}^t = 1 | c_t = 1) = 1 - m_d ,$$

where $f_a$ is the empirical false alarm rate and $m_d$ the missed detection rate of the detector. According to our detection results from several datasets, we set $f_a = 0.0001$ and $m_d = 0.4$.

The second observation $o_{c,2}^t$ is based on the history of past image positions of tracked faces, which we will call “tracking memory” in the following. At each iteration of the tracker, the tracking memory is updated slowly according to the mean of the current state distribution $\bar{X}_t$:

$$o_{c,2}^t = (1 - \beta) o_{c,2}^{t-1} + \beta I_t ,$$

where $\beta = 0.001$ and

$$I_t(i, j) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } (i, j) \text{ is covered by one of the bounding boxes described by } \bar{X}_t, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Figure 5.3 shows an example of the tracking memory during a run of the face tracker. Intuitively, we would like to initialise targets more quickly in regions where a person has been “seen” previously. Thus, we model $p(o_{c,2}^t | c_t)$ with a pair of sigmoid functions:

$$p(o_{c,2}^t = 1, \Theta) = \frac{1}{\pi} \arctan(\delta_t(o_{c,2}^t - \mu_t)) + \frac{1}{2}$$

$$p(o_{c,2}^t = 0, \Theta) = 1 - p(o_{c,2}^t = 1) ,$$

where the parameters $\Theta_t = (\mu_t, \delta_t)$, denote the offset and the slope of the sigmoid (see Fig. 5.4). Intuitively, the offset $\mu_t$ denotes the threshold value beyond which an observation $o_{c,2}^t$ is more likely to occur within the bounding box of a detected face than in a non-face area, whereas the slope controls how fast the likelihood change is around this threshold.
Parameter learning: the parameters $\Theta_l = (\delta_l, \mu_l)$ of the sigmoid functions in equations 5.16 and 5.17 have been trained offline with a set of $N^\pm$ observations $o_i$. These observations are tracking memory values that have been collected from real tracking sequences and are composed of $N^+$ positive instances measured at image positions of correct face detections, and $N^-$ negative instances measured at image positions of false detections. To train the model, we maximise the posterior probability of the labels for the given observations $\omega$:

$$\Theta^* = \text{argmax}_\Theta \prod_{i=1}^{N^\pm} p(c = C_i|o_i, \Theta),$$

(5.18)

where $C_i \in \{0, 1\}$ denotes the class label of $o_i$, and $p(c = c_i|o_i, \Theta) \propto p(o_i|c = c_i, \Theta)$ is given by Eq. 5.16 and 5.17, and we assumed an equal prior on both classes. In practise, we find a good approximation of $\Theta^*$ by doing a grid search in a reasonable range over the parameter space $\Theta$.

Figure 5.4 shows an example of a pair of learnt sigmoid functions and the respective decision boundary (in this case for target removal).

If observations are greater than $\mu$, the ratio $\frac{p(o_i|c=1)}{p(o_i|c=0)} > 1$, that means a face is more likely to be present. Otherwise, it is more likely that no face is present.

5.2.4.2 Removal

During tracking, we want to assess at each point in time if the algorithm is still correctly following a face or if it has lost track. The algorithm can lose track, for example, when it gets distracted by a similar background region or when a person leaves the scene. More concretely, the objective is to interrupt the tracking as soon as possible if a failure occurs, and to continue tracking otherwise, even when a face has not been detected and associated with the track for a long time.

In a way similar to target initialisation, we propose to use for each tracked face $i$ an HMM estimating at each time step $t$ the hidden status variable $k_{i,t}$ indicating correct tracking ($k_{i,t} = 1$)
5.2. On-line long-term multiple face tracking

Figure 5.5: The HMM for target removal, used for each tracked face. The variable \( k_t \) indicates if a given face is still tracked correctly or if a failure occurred. The probability of \( k_t \) is estimated recursively using the observations \( o^r_{t,1} \ldots o^r_{t,N_t} \).

or tracking failure \((k_{i,t} = 0)\). We will drop the face index \( i \) in the following. Figure 5.5 illustrates the proposed model.

Let us denote by \( O^r_t = [o^r_{t,1}, \ldots, o^r_{t,N_t}] \) the set of \( N_t \) observations at each time step \( t \), and by \( O^r_{1:t} = [O^r_1, \ldots, O^r_t] \) the sequence of observations from time 0 to time \( t \). The posterior probability of \( k_t \) can be recursively estimated as:

\[
p(k_t | O^r_{1:t}) = \frac{\sum_{k_{t-1}} p(O^r_t | k_t) p(k_t | k_{t-1}) p(k_{t-1} | O^r_{1:t-1})}{\sum_{k_{t-1}, k'_t} p(O^r_t | k'_t) p(k'_t | k_{t-1}) p(k_{t-1} | O^r_{1:t-1})},
\]

where

\[
p(O^r_t | k_t) = \prod_{i=1}^{N_t} p(o^r_{t,i} | k_t).
\]

The state transition probability \( p(k_t | k_{t-1}) \) is set to 0.999 for staying in the same state and 0.001 for changing state, assuming a frame rate of approximately 20 frames per second as in our experiments.

**Track ending:** for each tracked face and at each time step, we compute the ratio:

\[
r^k_t = \frac{p(k_t = 1 | O^r_{1:t})}{p(k_t = 0 | O^r_{1:t})}.
\]

If \( r^k_t < 1 \) for a given face, then the tracking is considered to have failed and the target is removed.

**Observations and likelihood models:** we propose to use \( N_t = 7 \) different types of observations \( O^r_t = [o^r_{t,1}, \ldots, o^r_{t,7}] \) extracted from the image as well as the state of the tracker itself. We can divide them into two categories:

- four *static* observations \((o^r_{t,1}, \ldots, o^r_{t,4})\) that provide indications on the *state of the tracker*, and
- three *dynamic* observations \((o^r_{t,5}, \ldots, o^r_{t,7})\) that provide indications on the *temporal evolution* and variability of certain observations.

Except for one observation, all likelihoods are modelled by pairs of sigmoid functions:

\[
p(o^r_{t,i} | k_t = 1, \Theta) = a_i \arctan(\delta_i(o^r_{t,i} - \mu_i)) + \frac{1}{2},
\]

\[
p(o^r_{t,i} | k_t = 0, \Theta) = 1 - p(o^r_{t,i} | k_t = 1),
\]

where, as for target creation observations (section 5.2.4.1), the amplitude \( a_i \) is set to \( \frac{1}{\pi} \) (or \( -\frac{1}{\pi} \) for some observation types), and the parameters \( \Theta_i = (\delta_i, \mu_i) \), *i.e.* the slope and the offset of the
sigmoid, have been trained offline with a set of positive and negative observations as described at the end of Section 5.2.4.1. The only difference is that the training observations are collected at each time instant during tracking runs and not only when faces are detected. Below, we describe each observation we have used and comment on the learnt parameters.

**Static observations:** the first static observation for a given target is based on the output of the face detector:

\[ o_{r,1} = \begin{cases} 
1 & \text{if a detection is associated with the target} \\
0 & \text{otherwise.} 
\end{cases} \] (5.24)

The likelihood \( p(o_{r,1}|k_t) \) is defined in the same way as for \( o_{c,1} \) in Eq. 5.13 (that is, \( p(o_{r,1} = u|c_t = l) = p(o_{c,1} = u|c_t = l) \)).

The second observation \( o_{r,2} \) is the tracking memory value at the respective target position \((m, n)\) in the image, as defined in the previous section (Eq. 5.14 and 5.15):

\[ o_{r,2} = o_{c,2}(m, n). \] (5.25)

This ensures that the tracking of a face is more likely to be maintained if a face stays at its previous position (with a high tracking memory value). And conversely, the target should be removed with a higher probability when it moves to image regions that were never occupied by a face before.

The third observation type is the tracker observation likelihood computed at the mean state value \( \bar{X}_{i,t} \) of target \( i \):

\[ o_{r,3} = p(Y_{i,t}|X_{i,t}), \] (5.26)

as defined by Eq. 5.5. The likelihood \( p(o_{r,3}|k_t) \) is again defined by a pair of sigmoids (Eq. 5.22 and 5.23).

The fourth observation relates to the variance of the target filtering distribution. More precisely, let \( \sigma_{i,t,x}^2 \) and \( \sigma_{i,t,y}^2 \) be the variances of the horizontal and vertical position of target state \( X_{i,t} \). Then we define

\[ o_{r,4} = \max(\sigma_{i,t,x}^2, \sigma_{i,t,y}^2). \] (5.27)

A higher variance of the state distribution means a higher uncertainty (and vice versa), and the track should be stopped more quickly.

**Dynamic observations:** the three remaining observations are based on the temporal variation of different features. They rely on the detection of rapid increases or decreases over time of particle variance and observation likelihood. To this end, we assume that the values of these features are normally distributed during tracking, and we use the Page-Hinkley test [82] to detect jumps or drops of these (one-dimensional, Gaussian) “signals” with respect to their means. This test works as follows: let \( \omega_t \) be the signal for which we want to detect an abrupt decrease. Then, the following values are computed at each iteration \( t \):

\[ M_{\omega,t} = M_{\omega,t-1} + \left( \omega_t - (\bar{\omega}_t - \frac{j_\omega}{2}) \right) \] (5.28)

\[ m_{\omega,t} = \max(m_{\omega,t-1}, M_{\omega,t}) \] (5.29)

\[ \hat{m}_{\omega,t} = m_{\omega,t} - M_{\omega,t}, \] (5.30)

where \( M_{\omega,0} = 0 \), \( j_\omega \) is a constant that determines the tolerated change of value \( \omega \), and \( \bar{\omega}_t \) is the running average of \( \omega \). \( M_{\omega,t} \) accumulates the values going above the expected lower bound \( (\bar{\omega} - j_\omega) \). The value \( m_{\omega,t} \) memorises the maximum value of this cumulative sum, and the difference between these last two values \( \hat{m}_{\omega,t} \) (Eq. 5.30) is an indication of an abrupt decrease of
5.2. On-line long-term multiple face tracking

Figure 5.6: Illustration of the Page-Hinckley test to detect abrupt decreases of a signal. The solid red line shows the temporal evolution of some signal, the purple dotted line shows the computed result of the Page-Hinckley test that we use as observation to detect abrupt signal drops. At time \( t = 14 \) a drop of the signal occurs and is correctly detected (peak of purple dotted line).

the value \( \omega \). On the other hand, if \( \omega_t \) decreases only gradually, then the running average \( \bar{\omega}_t \) will follow this decrease. The cumulative sum \( M_{\omega,t} \) will constantly increase, leading to \( \hat{m}_{\omega,t} = M_{\omega,t} \) and thus \( \hat{m}_{\omega,t} = 0 \). Figure 5.6 illustrates the Page-Hinckley test with some example data.

Similarly, for detecting an abrupt increase of \( \omega \) we compute:

\[
U_{\omega,t} = U_{\omega,t-1} + \left( \omega_t - \left( \bar{\omega}_t + \frac{j_\omega}{2} \right) \right) \\
u_{\omega,t} = \min(u_{\omega,t-1}, U_{\omega,t}) \\
\hat{u}_{\omega,t} = U_{\omega,t} - u_{\omega,t} 
\]

where \( U_{\omega,0} = 0 \). In its original form, the Page-Hinckley test produces a binary output. It is one if \( \hat{m}_{\omega,t} \) or \( \hat{u}_{\omega,t} \) is above a predefined threshold and zero otherwise. Here, we propose to directly use the values \( \hat{m}_{\omega,t} \) or \( \hat{u}_{\omega,t} \) as observations.

Thus, using equations 5.28-5.33, we define:

\[
o_{t,5} = \hat{m}_{o_{t,3}} \quad o_{t,6} = \hat{m}_{o_{t,4}} \quad o_{t,7} = \hat{u}_{o_{t,4}} \cdot
\]

Observations \( o_{t,5} \) indicate drops of the likelihood \( p(Y_t|\hat{X}_t) \) of a given face (see 5.26). And \( o_{t,6}, o_{t,7} \) indicate abrupt decreases and increases of the variance of the state distribution defined in 5.27. The likelihood functions \( p(o_{t,5}|k_t), p(o_{t,6}|k_t) \), and \( p(o_{t,7}|k_t) \) are defined by pairs of sigmoids (Eq. 5.22, 5.23) with parameters trained offline.

5.2.5 Re-identification

Our algorithm further tries to keep track of the identities of different persons and associates each track with a person, i.e. for each new target track it decides if it belongs to a previously seen person or if it is an new person. In this work, we built person models which are longer-term descriptions of person appearance acquired from observations during the tracking process. Here, a simple colour-based model, similar to [364] has been used. More specifically, the model \( P_{j,t} \) of a person \( j \) is composed of two colour histograms: one describing the face region, \( h_{j,t}^f \), and one
for the shirt, \( h_{s,i,t} \). The structure of the histograms is similar to the one used for the observation likelihood in the tracking algorithm (5.2.3.3), i.e. two different quantisation levels and decoupled colour and grey-scale bins.

If a target is added to the tracker and there is no stored person model that is un-associated, a new model is initialised immediately and associated to the target. Otherwise, the face and shirt histograms \((h_{f,i,t}, h_{s,i,t})\) of the new target \(i\) are computed recursively over \(r\) successive frames and stored in \(P_{i,t}^*\). After this period, we calculate the likelihood of each stored model \(P_{j,t}\) given an unidentified candidate \(P_{i,t}^*\):

\[
p(P_{j,t}|P_{i,t}^*) = \exp \left( -\lambda (w_d D^2[h_{f,j,t}, h_{f,i,t}] + w_s D^2[h_{s,j,t}, h_{s,i,t}]) \right),
\]

where \(D\) is the Euclidean distance, and the weights are \(w_d = 1, w_s = 2\). A given person \(i\) is then identified by simply determining the model \(P_{m,t}\) with the maximum likelihood:

\[
m = \arg\max_j p(P_{j,t}|P_{i,t}^*),
\]

provided that \(p(P_{m,t}|P_{i,t}^*)\) is above a threshold \(\theta\) (we chose 0.1 here). If not, a new person model is created and added to the stored list. All associated person models are updated at each iteration with a small factor \(\alpha_p = 0.01\). The candidate models are updated with factor \(\alpha^* = 0.1\).

### 5.2.6 Experiments

Experiments have been conducted on more than 9 hours of video data that have been annotated extensively. We used three sets of videos recorded in different environments (see Fig. 5.1). According to our scenario, recorded people have been sitting at a table and filmed by a central camera (roughly 2-3 metres away). They have been playing online games with people in a remote location using a laptop or touch-screen. As a result, they are often looking downwards and their faces are often not detected by a standard detector [379].

The principal performance measures are precision and recall (over time) of the face tracking result, as we want to track faces as long as possible (to obtain a high recall) and stop tracking as soon as a failure occurs (to increase the precision). The recall and false positive rate for an entire video are defined as:

\[
R = \frac{\sum_{i=2}^G \delta_i d_i}{\sum_{i=2}^G \delta_i}, \quad FP = \frac{\sum_{i=2}^G \delta_i f_i}{\sum_{i=2}^G \delta_i},
\]

where \(G\) is the number of annotated frames, \(d_i\) the proportion of correctly tracked/detected faces in frame \(i\) (i.e. those for which \(F > 0.1\)), \(f_i\) is the number of false positive outputs divided by the number of ground truth objects in frame \(i\), and \(\delta_i\) is the time difference between frame \(i\) and \(i-1\).

We also measure the total number of interruptions for a given dataset. An interruption is defined as the event when a track is falsely ended, i.e. the face (ground truth) is still present but the respective target is removed from the tracker.

Finally, to measure the accuracy of identification as described section 5.2.5, we computed the **object purity** [345] for each ground truth object:

\[
OP = \frac{\sum_{i=2}^G \delta_i q_i}{\sum_{i=2}^G \delta_i},
\]
where $G$ is again the number of annotated frames, and $q_i$ is the proportion of correctly identified faces in frame $i$, as explained in the following. The identity assigned to a ground truth object at time $i$ is given by the algorithm described in 5.2.5 and more specifically Eq. 5.36. Once the tracking has been run on a complete video, we can compute the above rate by associating to each object the face track that has the longest overlap with the object (according to the F-measure).

We compared our results against a standard face detector [379] including models for frontal and profile views, with two competitive baselines:

- **RJ-MCMC**: a tracker based on the Reversible-Jump Monte Carlo Markov Chain algorithm [214, 417]. In addition to the Update move, which follows the MCMC description in section 5.2.3.4, four other moves have been implemented to handle the creation and removal of targets: Add, Delete, Stay, and Leave. For more details, we refer the reader to [214, 417].

- **MCMC baseline**: an MCMC-based tracker, i.e. the algorithm described in section 5.2.3. For target creation and removal, the following strategy has been used: every (un-associated) face detection is initialised as a new target. We also tried to initialise a target only after several successive detections but this didn’t have a large impact on the precision. A tracked target was removed if it had no associated detections for 100 frames (8 seconds) or if the likelihood dropped below 10% of its running average.

Table 5.1 compares the algorithms for a given face detector threshold. The proposed method outperforms the others for all three datasets. Since the tracking algorithm for the MCMC baseline is the same as for the proposed method, the performance improvement is clearly due to our proposed target creation and removal mechanisms. The precision of RJ-MCMC is rather low because the creation and removal of targets is only based on the observation likelihood, as in [214]. Note that, unlike our approach, RJ-MCMC adds and removes targets at the particle level. Although this is a principled statistical framework that models at each point in time the current belief on the number of visible targets, it is more difficult to capture longer-term dynamics and features from the state distribution itself. The MCMC baseline, on the other hand, adds and removes targets based on more efficient, longer-term observations, namely the likelihood with respect to its mean and the face detector output. Thus, its performance is better than the one of RJ-MCMC. Also, the total number of tracker interruptions is decreased. This means that the proposed method maintains face tracks longer, even when the face detector provides no output for extended periods of time or when the likelihood is temporarily decreasing.

Figure 5.7 shows some tracking results of a video from dataset 3 containing 3-4 persons. The people change their seats from time to time, occlusions occur, and head poses can be challenging, as illustrated in the example.

More explanation and results can be found in [12, 38].

### 5.2.7 Conclusion

We have proposed a Bayesian framework for long-term, on-line MOT including a learnt track creation and removal approach to explicitly handle inherent weaknesses of object detection algorithms. Our experiments showed that the precision and recall with our tracking algorithm is considerably increased. We want to note that we also successfully applied our algorithm to long-term SOT, as well as to other scenarios related to Human-Robot Interaction, involving several people interacting with a robot [12]. Further, other existing algorithms could largely benefit from our track creation and removal framework, when applied on a longer time scale. Also, in the future, other types of long-term cues could be included in the proposed framework,
Chapter 5. Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments

Table 5.1: Performance comparison with the proposed multiple face tracking framework on the three datasets.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>dataset</th>
<th>face detection</th>
<th>RJ-MCMC</th>
<th>MCMC baseline</th>
<th>ours</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>recall</td>
<td>55.0%</td>
<td>89.5%</td>
<td>85.2%</td>
<td>93.9%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>FP rate</td>
<td>2.00%</td>
<td>20.75%</td>
<td>1.45%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td># interrupt.</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>861</td>
<td>395</td>
<td>112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>average OP</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>41.35%</td>
<td>68.69%</td>
<td>68.98%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>recall</td>
<td>39.9%</td>
<td>75.7%</td>
<td>69.9%</td>
<td>76.0%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>FP rate</td>
<td>0.41%</td>
<td>3.27%</td>
<td>0.77%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td># interrupt.</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>2062</td>
<td>1004</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>average OP</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>49.09%</td>
<td>66.61%</td>
<td>69.60%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>recall</td>
<td>48.3%</td>
<td>77.2%</td>
<td>75.1%</td>
<td>93.7%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>FP rate</td>
<td>0.33%</td>
<td>18.2%</td>
<td>1.06%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td># interrupt.</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>1299</td>
<td>455</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>average OP</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>27.96%</td>
<td>34.23%</td>
<td>57.46%</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 5.7: Snapshots of tracking results on dataset 3. Different coloured rectangles represent different identities (purple: face detector). Top: MCMC baseline, bottom: proposed approach. With the baseline method, some target are initialised from false detections 5.7(b), 5.7(g), and tracks are not maintained when detections are missing 5.7(c). Our approach avoids false initialisations and maintains good tracks longer. In 5.7(f) failures are detected earlier, and in 5.7(h), the lost target is re-initialised earlier (second person from the left).
5.3 Visual focus of attention estimation

5.3.1 Introduction

The approach I presented in the previous section is able to detect, re-identify and track persons in front of a camera. It is often necessary to further analyse the behaviour of the persons in a given scene. In particular, one wants to know what they are looking at, at any given point in time, i.e. what they are paying attention to in terms of their eye gaze. This can be an object or another person and is called the Visual Focus Of Attention (VFOA) (see Fig. 5.8).

Similar to our previous work on face tracking, we place this problem in a dynamic context, where the actual number of present persons is not fixed, and where their positions and the configuration of the room and furniture are not constrained. In this type of environment, many existing approaches fail, as they rely on a certain proximity to the camera or more specific hardware (depth and/or infra-red sensors). We have proposed an original algorithm that automatically and incrementally learns models for VFOA recognition from video data, and thus is independent from a given room or person configuration.

5.3.2 State of the art

In principle, the VFOA of a person can be determined by the person’s eye gaze direction. Many studies about automatic gaze estimation from video exist [153, 268, 282, 387, 388, 396], but their use is mostly limited to close-up and near-frontal views of a person’s face, for example in Human-Computer Interaction applications. Other works [138, 380, 381] rely on the fusion of information from several cameras. But often the spatial camera configuration is very constrained.
or a preceding calibration step is required, which can be difficult or even impossible depending on the application and environment. Also depth sensors, like Kinect, have been used for head pose and eye gaze estimation [153]. Although, their precision depends highly on the distance of the person from the sensor, this is an interesting direction for future research beyond the scope of this work. In our work, we have focused on (non-intrusive) scenarios where a single camera is fixed at a few meters from the filmed persons and where the persons stay roughly at the same places most of the time, like in formal meetings or video-conferencing applications (as illustrated in Fig. 5.8).

Previous work on VFOA analysis in such open spaces has mostly been based on the estimation of head pose as a surrogate for gaze [67, 69, 71, 83, 87, 110, 225, 299, 308, 344, 352, 354, 355, 381, 429]. This is done either globally, e.g. by learning to classify image patches of the head at different angles based on low-level visual features or locally, i.e. by localising certain facial features [318, 411] and by geometrically and statistically inferring the global orientation, or a combination of the two [67] (see [287] for a literature survey). However, these algorithms mostly require the person(s) to face the camera more or less and be rather close to it in order to have a relatively high image resolution of the face. Using video, head pose estimation can be included in a joint head and pose tracking algorithm [69, 226, 262, 321]. Early works of Stiefelhagen and Zhu [353], for example, used a Gaussian Mixture Model (GMM) on head pose angles to estimate VFOA. The model is initialised with k-means and further updated with an Expectation-Maximisation algorithm. They also showed that using the other participant’s speaking status increases the VFOA performance. Note that, in our work, we have concentrated on methods that are relying on visual information, although there are previous works that use audio, actions or or types of cues to infer the VFOA [73, 300, 344, 353]. Otsuka and Yamato [299] proposed a method based on a Dynamic Bayesian Network (DBN) that also analyses the group behaviour and detects certain conversational patterns. A GMM and Hidden Markov Model (HMM) approach for modelling and recognising VFOA was proposed by Smith et al. [346] for people walking by an outdoor advertisement and by Ba and Odobez [71] for analysing meeting videos. In the latter work, the authors also presented a MAP adaptation method to automatically adapt the VFOA model to the individual persons as well as a geometrical model (based on findings from [151, 177]) combining head orientation and eye gaze direction. Voit and Stiefelhagen [381, 382] built on this geometrical model and presented VFOA recognition results on a dynamic dataset with multiple cameras. Later, Ba and Odobez [72] extended their approach on VFOA estimation for meetings with a DBN that incorporates contextual information, like speaking status, slide change, and modelling conversation behaviour. Dong et al. [138] proposed an approach also based on a DBN which is similar to ours in the fact that they recognise VFOA by comparing tracked face image patches with a set of clusters modelling the face appearance for each attention target. However, the difference to our approach is that the clusters in their algorithm are trained before the tracking and in a supervised way. Thus, the number of targets and the targets itself are known in advance.

The work of Benfold et al. [87] is similar to ours in that they also perform unsupervised training on head images in order to determine where people look at in a given video. However, their approach is not incremental (although they claim that it could be extended) and needs an initial training of prior models using hand-labelled ground plane velocities and gaze directions of persons in a given video. They do not extract VFOA but head orientation (using a given number of classes), and they apply their approach to video surveillance data where they take advantage of people moving, which is different from our indoor scenario. On the one hand, the advantage of their probabilistic model – a conditional random field (CRF) – is that a more powerful discriminative head pose classifier can be learnt taking into account several hidden
variables (walking speed, angle velocities etc.). On the other hand, the complexity of learning and inference is increased, and the model is also independent from the head tracking as opposed to our approach that allows for a purely sequential and joint inference.

As experimental results of these previous works show, head pose can be used effectively to estimate the VFOA of a group of people, e.g. in a meeting room, to a certain extend. However, there are certain drawbacks of this approach: for example, in uncontrolled environments it is difficult to estimate head pose reliably because it often requires a large amount of annotated training data of head appearances or shapes beforehand in order to model all the possible variations of a head and face among different people as well as for a given individual. These data are often not available, or too time-consuming to produce. Further, for accurate head pose estimation results, a relatively precise localisation of the head, the face, or facial features – commonly called face alignment – is crucial but challenging in unconstrained application scenarios.

Another difficulty in automatic VFOA estimation is to determine the number of semantic visual targets for a given person in a video and to map them to given head pose or eye gaze angles. A preceding supervised training step is commonly performed on separate video data, and in some approaches the model (e.g. a GMM) is adapted on-line to a given video. However, it is desirable to avoid this scene-dependant training step or in some applications it might even be impossible. Further, the subsequent model adaptation can in many cases not cope with a different number of focusing targets or when the persons’ locations differ too much from those in the training data.

We proposed a novel approach that alleviates these problems. Our algorithm, given a video stream from a single camera and the rough 2D position estimation of a person’s head, incrementally learns to automatically extract the VFOA of the person without explicitly estimating head pose or gaze and without any prior model of the head, face, the room configuration, or other external conditions. The proposed method learns on-line the different classes of targets in an unsupervised way directly from the low-level visual features. This means also that, as opposed to supervised algorithms, it will not assign labels to the different targets (e.g. ‘table’, ‘screen’, ‘person 1’). However, we will experimentally show that the proposed unsupervised approach is able to identify and estimate the (unlabelled) targets with higher accuracy than a classical supervised approach. The fact that no pre-trained model is needed makes this approach especially interesting for applications where the specific environment, as well as the configuration of the room and the filmed persons is not known a priori, and where an explicit training phase is not possible.

5.3.3 Face and VFOA tracking

The principal procedure of our approach is illustrated in Fig. 5.9. First, a basic tracking algorithm is initialised and tracks a rectangular face region throughout the video stream. The image patch inside the tracked face region is extracted and visual features are computed to initialise the VFOA model at the first video frame and to update it at each subsequent frame during the training phase (see section 5.3.4). An incremental clustering algorithm on these low-level features is used to learn face appearances corresponding to attention targets of the person. At the same time a matrix modelling the transition probabilities between the different targets is learnt, and together with the clusters forms a continuous HMM. Note that the learning is performed on-line and does not require any prior knowledge on head pose or room configuration.

After a given number of iterations (a couple of minutes from the beginning of a video) the training phase stops and the Particle Filter continues to jointly track face position and VFOA
Chapter 5. Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments

Particle Filter:
face and VFOA tracking

HMM training

video stream

face position + VFOA

face image patches

VFOA model

Figure 5.9: Principal procedure of the VFOA learning and tracking approach.

of a person using the learnt HMM model, i.e. the transition probabilities and the face clusters.

In order to facilitate understanding, before describing the main contribution of this work, i.e. the unsupervised VFOA learning, we will first explain the underlying tracking framework in the following section.

For tracking the face position and VFOA of a person, we used the Sequential Monte Carlo algorithm, commonly known as Particle Filter (c.f. [12, 304, 321]). It provides a solution for the classical recursive Bayesian model, where, assuming we have the observations \( Y_{1:t} \) from time 1 to \( t \), we estimate the posterior probability distribution over the state \( X_t \) at time \( t \):

\[
p(X_t | Y_{1:t}) = \frac{1}{C} p(Y_t | X_t) \times \int_{X_{t-1}} p(X_t | X_{t-1}) p(X_{t-1} | Y_{1:t-1}) \, dX_{t-1},
\]

where \( C \) is a normalisation constant. For simplicity and more principled evaluation, we only consider the tracking of a single face in a video, although our approach can easily be extended to multiple faces using an MCMC sampling approach (c.f. section 5.2.3) and thus be integrated in our MOT framework described in the previous section.

In our experiments, the state \( X_t = (\hat{X}_t, v) \) is composed of the state of the face \( \hat{X}_t = (x, y, s) \) with \( x, y \) being its position and \( s \) being its bounding box scale factor, as well as the current VFOA target index \( v \in 1..V \).

The dynamics of the face state \( p(\hat{X}_t | \hat{X}_{t-1}) \) are defined by a first-order auto-regressive model with Gaussian noise:

\[
p(\hat{X}_t | \hat{X}_{t-1}) = N(\hat{X}_{t-1}; 0, \Sigma_p).
\]

The dynamics of the discrete VFOA target index \( v \) are defined by transition probability matrix

\[
A := [a_{ij}], \quad i, j = 1..V \quad \text{with}
\]

\[
a_{ij} := p(v_t = j | v_t = i)
\]

being the transition probability from VFOA target \( i \) to \( j \). The co-variance matrix \( \Sigma_p = \text{diag}(\sigma_{px}, \sigma_{py}, \sigma_{ps}) \) of the auto-regressive model is fixed, whereas the matrix \( A \) is learnt online during the tracking of a person in a given video stream (see section 5.3.4.2).

The observations likelihood is defined as the product of a colour likelihood and texture likelihood:

\[
p(Y_t | X_t) = p(Y^c_t | X_t)p(Y^t_t | X_t),
\]

where the colour likelihood is used to track the position and size \( (x, y, s) \) of the face bounding box, and the texture likelihood is mainly used to track the VFOA target \( v \). We define:

\[
p(Y^c_t | X_t) \propto \exp \left( -\lambda_1 \sum_{r=1}^{9} (D^c_{V}[h^c_r, h_r(X_t)]) \right),
\]

and
where $\lambda_1$ is a constant, $h_r(X_t)$ are HSV colour histograms extracted from a grid of $r = 9$ cells centred at $X_t$, $h_r^*$ is the reference histogram initialised from the face region in the first frame, and $D_C$ is the Bhattacharyya distance. As in [304], the histogram bins for the H and S channels are decoupled from the V channel. Also the quantisation is applied at two different levels, i.e., 4 bins and 8 bins, to improve the robustness under difficult lighting conditions. This leads to an overall colour observation vector size of $9 \cdot (8 \cdot 8 + 4 \cdot 4 + 4) = 828$.

The texture likelihood is defined similarly:

$$p(Y^T_t | X_t) \propto \exp \left( -\lambda_2 \sum_{r=1}^{16} \left( D_T[\mu_{r,v}, t_r(X_t)] \right) \right) ,$$

where $\lambda_2$ is a constant, $t_r(X_t)$ are Histograms of Oriented Gradients (HOG) (see description below) extracted (similarly to $h_r$) from a grid of 16 cells (indexed by $r$) centred at $X_t$, and $\mu_{r,v}$ are the reference histograms corresponding to the VFOA target index $v$ in $X_t$. The overall texture model is composed of a set of $N$-dimensional clusters with means $\mu_{r,i}$ where each cluster $i \in 1..V$ corresponds to a VFOA target. $D_T$ is the normalised Euclidean distance:

$$D_T(\mu_{r,i}, t_r(X_t)) = \sqrt{\sum_{j=1}^{N} \frac{(t_{r,j}(X_t) - \mu_{r,i,j})^2}{\sigma_j^2 + \epsilon}},$$

with $\epsilon$ being a small constant avoiding division by zero.

The feature vectors $t_r(X_t)$ constitute the visual observations used for recognising the VFOA targets of a person in a video by means of $p(Y^T_t | X_t)$. They are computed on a 4 by 4 grid of non-overlapping cells on a face image patch as illustrated in Fig. 5.10(a). For each cell, two normalised two-dimensional histograms of unsigned oriented gradients and magnitudes are computed using a specific quantisation scheme illustrated in Fig. 5.10(b). The gradient orientation is quantised in 4 bins and the magnitude in 2 bins. An additional bin (with no orientation) is used for very weak gradients (in the centre of the half circle in the diagram). Also, to improve the overall robustness and discriminative power, we compute two histograms at different quantisation levels for orientation: 4 and 8, and normalise each of them separately. Thus, the dimension $N$ of the feature vector is: $16 \cdot (4 \cdot 2 + 1 + 8 \cdot 2 + 1) = 416$. One advantage of these histogram features is that they are relatively robust to small spatial shifts of the overall bounding box, which frequently occur with common face tracking methods.

### 5.3.4 Unsupervised, incremental VFOA learning

The VFOA model can be regarded as a dynamic HMM estimating the hidden variable $v$, the VFOA target index, from the observed features $t_r(X_t)$, illustrated in Fig. 5.11. It consists of
two main parts. First, the data model that is used for the likelihood computation in Eq. 5.44 and that contains the $k$ cluster means $\mu_i$ and a global co-variance matrix $\Sigma$, and second, the matrix $A$ (Eq. 5.41) defining the transition probabilities from one cluster to another. All, these parameters are learnt on-line during the training phase, and used subsequently in the tracking (c.f. section 5.3.3). After training, the learnt parameters $\mu_i$, $\Sigma$, and $A$ of the HMM are used in the Particle Filter framework explained in the previous section to jointly estimate the posterior probability of the state $X_t$ at each time step. In the following, the training procedures are described in more detail.

5.3.4.1 Clustering algorithm

The visual feature vectors $t_r(\bar{X}_t)$ computed on the image region corresponding to the mean state of the current distribution at time $t$ are used to incrementally learn the VFOA classes. To this end, we propose a specific sequential $k$-means clustering algorithm with an adaptive number of clusters. The algorithm constructs a model of $k$ clusters corresponding to the VFOA classes and described by their mean feature vectors $\mu_{r,i} (i = 1..k)$ and a global diagonal co-variance matrix $\Sigma = \text{diag}(\sigma_1, \ldots, \sigma_N)$. For better readability, in the following notation, we drop the indexes for the cell $r$ and the time step $t$, denoting the current cluster means as $\mu_i$ and the current feature vector as $t$. Algorithm 1 summarises the main learning procedure. At each time step the observed feature vector $t$ is computed, and the closest cluster $c$ is determined using the normalised Euclidean distance (Eq. 5.45). Also, the mean distance $\bar{D}_T$ between each of the $k$ clusters is calculated, and a new cluster is created if the distance of the current feature vector to the closest cluster is greater than $\theta_c \bar{D}_T$, where $\theta_c$ is a parameter of our algorithm (set to 2 in our experiments). Then, the mean vector $\mu_c$ of the closest cluster as well as the global covariance matrix $\Sigma$ are incrementally updated using the current feature vector $t$. Finally, pairs of clusters are merged together if the distance of their means are below the threshold $\theta_d \bar{D}_T$ (with $\theta_d = 0.01$ in our experiments). At each time step, the algorithm classifies the observed features $t$ from the mean state of a face into one of the $k$ clusters: $c$, and, as we will show with the following experimental results, the learnt classes correspond to a large degree to specific targets of VFOA.

5.3.4.2 VFOA transition model

The transition probability matrix $A$ of equation 5.41 is learnt on-line during the training phase at the same time as the cluster centres. The main procedure is the following. The visual feature vectors $t$ of the image patch corresponding to the current mean state are extracted, and the closest cluster $c_t$ according to the normalised Euclidean distance (Eq. 5.45) is computed. Then, the transition probabilities $a_{c_t-1,j} := p(v = j|v = c_{t-1})$ are linearly updated, using the following
5.3. Visual focus of attention estimation

### Algorithm 1 Incremental VFOA clustering algorithm

\[ k = k_{ini}, \quad \Sigma = \Sigma_{ini}, \quad \mu_i = t_0, \quad n_i = 0 \quad (i = 1..k) \]

**for** \( t = 1 \) to \( T \) **do**

1. \( c = \text{argmin}_i(D_T(t, \mu_i)) \) \( \triangleright \) get closest cluster

2. \( D_T = \frac{2}{N(N+1)} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \sum_{j=i+1}^{k} (D_T(\mu_i, \mu_j)) \)

   - **if** \( D_T(t, \mu_c) > \theta \) **then** \( \triangleright \) add new cluster
     - \( k \leftarrow k + 1 \)
     - \( n_k = 1 \)
     - \( \mu_k = t \)
   - **else** \( \triangleright \) update closest cluster
     - \( n_c \leftarrow n_c + 1 \)
     - \( \mu_c \leftarrow \mu_c + \frac{1}{n_c}(t - \mu_c) \)

3. incrementally update \( \Sigma \)

**for** each cluster pair \((i,j)\) **do** \( \triangleright \) merge clusters

   - **if** \( D_T(\mu_{c_i}, \mu_{c_j}) < \theta_d D_T \) **then**
     - \( \mu_i = (n_i \mu_i + n_j \mu_j)/(n_i + n_j) \)
     - \( n_i = n_i + n_j \)
     - remove cluster \( j \)
     - \( k \leftarrow k - 1 \)

**end for**

**end for**

\[
a_{c_{t-1},j} = \frac{\gamma \mathbb{1}_{j=c_t} + (1-\gamma)a_{c_{t-1},j}}{\mathbb{1}_{c_{t-1}}}, \quad \forall j \in 1..k, \quad (5.46)
\]

where \( \mathbb{1}_x \) denotes the indicator function, and the constant \( \gamma = 0.001 \). Thus, the transition probability from \( c_{t-1} \) to \( c_t \) is increased, and from \( c_{t-1} \) to any other cluster \( j \) is decreased. Also, a new row and column is added if a new cluster is created and inversely if a cluster is removed. At the end of each iteration, the row \( c_{t-1} \) that has been updated is normalised to sum up to 1.0. Algorithm 2 summarises the overall procedure. In many cases, the learnt transition matrix will have high values on the diagonal (staying in the same state most of the time) and low values elsewhere. Of course, this depends on the dynamics of the scene. In our formal meeting setting, people are interacting frequently and changing their attention targets quite often. Thus, this seems not to be a limitation. But even in more static settings (e.g., a person giving a talk), this model is still appropriate. And we can observe this with less active persons in some videos in

### Algorithm 2 Incremental learning of the transition matrix

**initialise** \( A \) to uniform distribution: \( a_{ij} = \frac{1}{k}, \quad i, j \in 1..k \)

**for** \( t = 1 \) to \( T \) **do**

1. adapt the size of \( A \) to \( k \times k \)
2. \( c_t = \text{argmin}_i D(t, \mu_i) \)
3. \( a_{c_{t-1},i} = \frac{\gamma \mathbb{1}_{j=c_t} + (1-\gamma)a_{c_{t-1},i}}{\mathbb{1}_{c_{t-1}}} \) normalise row \( c_{t-1} \) to sum up to 1.0

**end for**
our experiments. Clearly, transitions with very low probabilities can still be “triggered” if the observation likelihood of the target state is high enough. Nevertheless, to prevent extreme cases where a transition probability becomes zero and thus a state inaccessible, in our experiments, we set a very small lower boundary \(10^{-3}\) for the transition probabilities.

### 5.3.5 Experiments

We evaluated the proposed approach on three public datasets from different scenarios, each containing a certain number of persons sitting around a table and filmed roughly from the front (see Fig. 5.12): TA2\(^1\) [39], IHPD\(^2\) [70], PETS 2003\(^3\).

Note that we did not evaluate the accuracy of face or head pose tracking, as this is not our main interest here. Our goal is to correctly estimate the VFOA of a person, which requires a robust face tracking system. The VFOA targets are different for each dataset, due to the scenario and the layout of the room. Annotation has been done manually and frame-by-frame, where frames with ambiguous visual focus and transition phases have not been annotated.

First, we will show some qualitative results on the clustering that is obtained on some of the videos. Fig. 5.13 illustrates the result of the proposed on-line clustering algorithm (Alg. 1) for six different persons and videos. Each point represents a 2D projection of the 416-dimensional gradient feature vectors \(t_r(\bar{X}_t)\) extracted from the mean state at time \(t\) (after the training phase).

The linear embedding has been performed by applying multi-dimensional scaling with Euclidean distance measure on the whole data. Different colours (and point shapes) correspond to different labels produced by a k-Nearest Neighbour classifier using the normalised Euclidean distance, Eq. 5.45, and the learnt cluster means \(\mu_i\) as references. Note that the clusters means have been trained during the training phase, \(i.e.\) the first few minutes of a video. There are two difficulties that we want to emphasise here: first, the test data might be distributed slightly differently (\(e.g.\) the person’s main focus changes), and second, the training data arrives sequentially and in a non-random order, \(i.e.\) a person’s focus changes slowly and might be static for long periods. Note also, that the 2D projection of all points suggests that clustering is difficult in many cases, like in the top middle, bottom left, and bottom right example where cluster centres and frontiers are not so clear. Nevertheless, the output of the algorithm looks reasonable, apart from the bottom right example.

Note that, as our algorithm is unsupervised, we do not have the actual estimated VFOA targets (\(i.e.\) meaningful labels) that we can directly compare to the ground truth. For evaluation

---

\(^1\)https://www.idiap.ch/dataset/ta2  
\(^2\)https://www.idiap.ch/dataset/headpose  
\(^3\)http://www.cvg.rdg.ac.uk/slides/pets.html
5.3. Visual focus of attention estimation

Figure 5.13: Visualisation of the clustering of low-level features produced by the proposed incremental learning algorithm (Alg. 1) for some examples. (Best viewed in colour.) From left to right, top to bottom: TA2 room 1, TA2 room 2, 2 x IHPD, PETS, and the last example shows a poor clustering result for one TA2 example.

purposes, after running our method on a whole video, we therefore assign to each cluster the target that maximises VFOA accuracy, i.e. we assume that we know which target label each cluster corresponds to. We believe that this is not a very restrictive assumption, as the labels could be assigned in a separate processing step, for example by incorporating a more general discriminative classifier trained beforehand.

In that way, we quantitatively evaluated our algorithm initialising it manually with a bounding box around the face and measuring the Frame-based Recognition Rate (FRR) of the VFOA for all the videos and averaging it over each dataset and over several runs. The FRR is simply the proportion of frames with correctly recognised VFOA:

$$FRR = \frac{N_c}{N_t}, \quad (5.47)$$

where $N_c$ is the number of correct classifications, and $N_t$ is the total number of annotated video frames. As our algorithm is learning the VFOA model incrementally, we need to account for a certain training phase, which we do not include in the evaluation. We used 8000 (∼ 5 min.) training frames in the beginning of the videos (not annotated), and evaluated the FRR on the following sequence with annotation.

We compared the proposed approach with three other approaches:

- **supervised**: a state-of-the-art supervised approach, that uses a specific face detection and tracking algorithm, a head pose estimator as in [321], and Gaussian Mixtures Models (GMM) to model different VFOA targets in terms of head pose pan and tilt angles as in [71, 353]. In this approach, the head pose model is trained beforehand in a supervised way, and the GMM parameters have been partly trained and partly defined manually.

- **no PF**: a variant of the proposed approach that does not integrate the VFOA estimation
### Table 5.2: VFOA recognition rate of the proposed algorithm with and without Particle Filter integration, and with fixed or learnt transition probability matrix $A$ compared to a classical supervised approach.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>TA2</th>
<th>IHPD</th>
<th>PETS 2003</th>
<th>average</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>supervised [72]</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>0.49</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.4489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>no PF</td>
<td>0.7663</td>
<td>0.5163</td>
<td>0.4437</td>
<td>0.5754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PF, fixed TM</td>
<td>0.6577</td>
<td>0.5235</td>
<td>0.4379</td>
<td>0.5397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PF, learnt TM</td>
<td><strong>0.7915</strong></td>
<td><strong>0.5282</strong></td>
<td><strong>0.4668</strong></td>
<td><strong>0.5955</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 5.2 shows the average FRR for these different approaches. One can see that the proposed approach outperforms the supervised method with an average FRR of $\sim 60\%$ compared to $\sim 45\%$.

Tracking the VFOA with a Particle Filter, as opposed to a frame-by-frame estimation, and learning the transition probability matrix on-line also improves the recognition performance on the three tested datasets. These results are comparable or superior to those published in the literature, although the evaluation protocols are not exactly the same due to the unsupervised and incremental nature of our method. Note that we do not include any contextual information like speaking status or other external events in the VFOA estimation process as in other existing work. This may additionally improve the overall performance.

#### 5.3.6 Conclusion

We presented a VFOA tracking algorithm that incrementally, and in an unsupervised way, learns a VFOA model from directly low-level features extracted from a stream of face images coming from a tracking algorithm. The VFOA estimation is based on an HMM whose parameters are learnt incrementally and which is tightly integrated into a global Particle Filter framework that is used for face tracking. In a meeting room or video-conferencing setting, the proposed method is able to automatically learn the different VFOA targets of a person without any prior knowledge about the number of persons or the room configuration. By assigning a VFOA label to each cluster a posteriori, we evaluated the VFOA recognition rate for three different datasets and almost two hours of annotated data. The obtained results are very promising and show that this type of unsupervised learning can outperform traditional supervised approaches.

#### 5.4 Conclusion

Considerable progress has been made in the last decades on MOT in more and more dynamic and difficult environments. Recent work has mostly been focusing on improving visual observation
models and shifted more and more towards learning of powerful discriminative appearance models and the use of tracking-by-detection approaches, leading to highly robust tracking methods. However, despite our contributions to robust multiple object and face tracking, many problems tackled in this chapter are still remaining to some extent. For instance, how to robustly handle false and missing detections and occlusions in on-line MOT? Or how to incrementally learn appearance models in a weakly supervised or unsupervised way with few data? Or how to adapt the appearance and tracking models to a given context and a given environment (indoor vs. outdoor, changing and possibly unknown meteorological or lighting conditions etc.). Such adaptive MOT algorithms are of great importance in many practical applications related to computer vision, such as social robotics, autonomous vehicles, video-surveillance or Human-Computer interaction and games.

In the next chapter, we will describe several of our research works more related to the online learning of powerful appearance and scene models applied to SOT. Most of them could be extended or integrated to MOT. But, as is common in the literature, for evaluation and comparison with the state-of-the-art, we do not treat and include the additional challenges related to the tracking of multiple objects.
Chapter 5. Multiple object tracking in unconstrained environments
6 On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects

6.1 Introduction

A crucial part in visual object tracking is the appearance model. In the works described in the previous chapter, we mainly used relatively simple models based on colour and texture histograms. The reason for this choice was their low computational complexity allowing for real-time applications, their high degree of invariance to different viewing angles, lighting conditions, occlusion and other deformations, and finally the relatively simple integration into a generative tracking framework by well-conditioned likelihood functions.

In the last years, much progress has been made on the definition of appearance models that are more robust to lighting and pose variations, background clutter, object deformations, partial occlusion and motion blur. Most of them are discriminative models – binary classifiers – that are trained to distinguish between the object to track and the background. Note that, in the previous chapter, we used such a model, the face detector, for track creation and termination and in the proposal function of the Particle Filter but it was not integrated in the appearance likelihood function.

Although different models can be built for each specific category of objects to track, like faces, persons, cars, it is of great interest to develop generic models and methods that are capable of tracking (on-line) any object in a given video stream, e.g. by using a designated image region in the first frame. This avoids the laborious and difficult step of defining or learning a model beforehand that is suited for any given environment and context of operation. Besides their sub-optimality in a given visual scene, such models are relatively complex and demanding in terms of computational and memory resources.

An object to track commonly undergoes a certain number of visual deformations in the image. On the one hand, this is due to the environment, like different lighting conditions, changing background or acquisition conditions. On the other hand, the object itself can change its shape, orientation or colour in the image. Therefore, to be effective in on-line tracking, appearance models need to adapt to these changing conditions over time. Usually, with discriminative models, this is achieved by some type of on-line learning, i.e. the model parameters are updated according to new observations from the video stream.

However, there are a few major challenges that arise with this approach:

- On-line learning methods need to adapt continuously throughout the video, because, firstly, many (different) observation samples are needed to built effective discriminative models, and, secondly, from a statistical signal processing point of view, most environments are non-stationary, and more recent observations should be prioritised. This bears the risk of gradually “forgetting” the object’s appearance from the beginning.
Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects

- The on-line learning approach should be able, from continuously arriving data, to incrementally build a model that generalises well over all previous data but does not grow indefinitely.

- When updating the model, noise is introduced. For example, information from the background is considered belonging to the object or vice versa. On the one hand, updating quickly results in a highly adaptive model that is able to cope with abrupt appearance variations, but may lead the tracker to “drift” or, ultimately, even to lose the object. On the other hand, updating more slowly leads to a more stable model but less capable of adapting to dynamic changes. This is known as the “stability-plasticity” dilemma.

In this chapter, I will present three different approaches that we proposed to tackle these problems – all applied in an on-line SOT context. First, an efficient method to track arbitrary, deformable objects. Second, an approach to include scene information in the discriminative on-line learning of appearance models. And third, another approach to integrate scene context by dynamically selecting appropriate tracking models. The first two are joint work with Christophe Garcia at LIRIS, and the third one has been performed in the context of the PhD thesis of Salma Moujtahid [283] co-supervised with Atilla Baskurt at LIRIS.

6.2 Tracking deformable objects

6.2.1 Introduction

Tracking arbitrary objects that are non-rigid, moving or static, rotating and deforming, partially occluded, under changing illumination and without any prior knowledge is a challenging task. The problem of model-free on-line tracking is generally studied in the literature with benchmark videos where the goal is to follow a single object throughout the whole sequence. Given the object’s initial position or bounding box in the first frame, the task is to estimate its state in the rest of the frames while sequentially processing the data. When no prior knowledge about the object’s shape and appearance as well as motion is available, one of the main difficulties is to incrementally learn a robust model from consecutive video frames.

6.2.2 State of the art

Earlier works [123, 174, 175, 198, 277, 293, 304, 417] on visual object tracking mostly consider a bounding box representation (or some other simple geometric model) of the object to track with a global appearance model. These classical methods are very robust to some degree of appearance change and local deformations (as in face tracking), and also allow for a fast implementation. However, for tracking non-rigid objects that undergo a large amount of deformation and appearance variation, e.g. due to occlusions or illumination changes, these approaches are less suitable. Although some algorithms effectively cope with object deformations by tracking their contour, e.g. [119, 150, 302, 316, 422], most of them require the object to be moving or need prior shape knowledge [124]. Other approaches describe an object by a relatively dense set of key-points that are matched in each frame [176, 192, 235, 306] to track the object. However, these methods have mostly been applied to relatively rigid objects.

As mentioned above, many existing methods, follow a tracking-by-detection approach, where a discriminative model of the object to track is built and updated “on-line”, i.e. during tracking, in order to adapt to possible appearance changes. For example, Adam et al. [59] use a patch-based appearance model with integral histograms of colour and intensity. The dynamic
6.2. Tracking deformable objects

Patch template configuration allows for modeling spatial structure and to be robust to partial occlusions. Grabner et al. [165] proposed an Online Adaboost (OAB) learning algorithm that dynamically selects weak classifiers that discriminate between the object image region and the background. Later, they extended this method to a semi-supervised algorithm [166] that uses a fixed (or adaptive [349]) prior model to avoid drift and an on-line boosting framework learning with unlabelled data. Babenko et al. [74, 415] presented another on-line method based on Multiple Instance Learning (MIL), where the positive training examples are bags of image patches containing at least one positive (object) image patch. Besides boosting algorithms, Online Random Forests have been proposed for adaptive visual object tracking [327, 329], where randomised trees are incrementally grown to classify an image region as object or background. Kalal et al. [204, 206] also use randomised forests which they combine effectively with a Lucas-Kanade tracker in a framework called Tracking-Learning-Detection (TLD) where the tracker updates the detector using spatial and temporal constraints and the detector re-initialises the tracker in case of drift.

In order to cope with changing appearance, Mei and Ling [277] introduced the $\ell_1$ tracker that is based on a sparse set of appearance templates that are collected during tracking and used in the observation model of a particle filter. Recently, several extensions or other sparse-representation-based methods have been proposed [80, 190, 366, 435, 446, 452] to improve the robustness or reduce the computational complexity. However, these approaches are still relatively time-consuming due to the complex $\ell_1$ minimisation. A sparse set of templates has also been used by Liu et al. [254], but with smaller image patches of object parts, and by Kwon and Lee [222] in their Visual Tracking Decomposition (VTD) method. In a similar spirit, Ross et al. [323] proposed a particle filter algorithm called IVT that uses an observation model relying on the eigenbasis of image patches computed on-line using an incremental PCA algorithm. Wang et al. [385] also used a linear subspace appearance representation and employed a specific mechanism to eliminate outliers. As a compromise between discrimination power and ability to model deformable object, image patches representing object parts have been proposed by several previous works [120, 140, 409]. However, their spatial structure needs to be modelled and updated in addition, and patch-based appearance representations are sensitive to object rotations and sometimes difficult to adapt over time. Other approaches, more similar to ours, consist in using a pixel-based classifier [68, 105]. Avidan [68], for example, proposed an ensemble tracking method that labels each pixel as foreground or background with an Adaboost algorithm that is updated on-line. However, all of these methods still operate on image regions described by bounding boxes and inherently have difficulties to track objects undergoing large deformations.

To overcome this problem, recent approaches integrate some form of segmentation into the tracking process. For example, Nejhum et al. [290] proposed to track articulated objects with a set of independent rectangular blocks that are used in a refinement step to segment the object with a graph-cut algorithm. Similarly, although not segmenting the object, Kwon and Lee [224] handle deforming objects by tracking configurations of a dynamic set of image patches, and they use Basin Hopping Monte Carlo (BHMC) sampling to reduce the computational complexity. Other approaches [319, 393, 413] apply a segmentation at the super-pixel level, or at several different levels [191]. Bibby and Reid [94] proposed an adaptive probabilistic framework separating the tracking of non-rigid objects into registration and level-set segmentation, where posterior probabilities are computed at the pixel level. Aeschliman et al. [60] also combined tracking and segmentation in a Bayesian framework, where pixel-wise likelihood distributions of several objects and the background are modelled by Gaussian functions whose parameters are learnt on-line. Čehovin et al. [377] used a similar adaptive pixel-wise probabilistic colour segmentation of object and background with histograms where the output is used in the observa-
tion likelihood function of a particle filter. More recently, Wen et al. [400] proposed a multi-part segmentation and tracking approach based on a joint energy-minimisation framework. Several other recent methods [92, 312] effectively employ an adaptive segmentation based on colour histograms to improve the robustness to object deformations. In a different application context, pixel-based descriptors have also been used for 3D articulated human-body detection and tracking by Shotton et al. [340] on segmented depth images. In the approach proposed by Belagiannis et al. [84], a graph-cut segmentation is applied separately to the image patches provided by a particle filter. The work of Godec and Roth [162] is similar to ours. The authors proposed a patch-based voting algorithm with Hough forests [154]. By back-projecting the patches that voted for the object centre, the authors initialise a graph-cut algorithm to segment foreground from background. The resulting segmentation is then used to update the patches’ foreground and background probabilities in the Hough forest. This method achieves good tracking results on many challenging benchmark videos. However, due to the graph-cut segmentation it is relatively slow. Also, the segmentation is discrete and binary, which can increase the risk of drift due to wrongly segmented image regions.

Much more efficient are correlation filter-based tracking methods (e.g. [63, 92, 120, 127–129]), originally proposed by Bolme et al. [96] and its kernelised version by Henriques et al. [182]. In these approaches, tracking can be performed in the frequency domain without exhaustive sliding window search around the previous object position. However, despite recent advances they remain sensitive to local object deformations and fast appearance changes.

Recently, several methods based on Convolutional Neural Networks (CNN) have provided state-of-the-art results, e.g. [242, 265, 289, 390]. These networks are mostly initialised from pre-trained models (e.g. on the ImageNet dataset) and fine-tuned on-line during tracking [289]. Or the first pre-trained layers are used as feature extractors and combined with other tracking approaches, like correlation filters [265]. The employed neural network architectures are relatively complex and computationally expensive and rely heavily on GPU computing in order to be practical.

To cope with object deformation, several works propose approaches that incorporate a shape model. One can distinguish two families: parametric and non-parametric models. Parametric shape models employ a geometric shape, like an ellipse [95], splines [198] or other parametric curves [198, 331], or even 3D meshes [179] that are fit to the object in each image of the sequence. Usually, these models are designed for specific types of objects, like heads, faces, hands etc. and thus cannot be applied to general object tracking. The same limitation holds for some non-parametric models that are based on exemplar shapes, for example for pedestrians [285, 368]. On the contrary, most non-parametric models are generic. Early works proposed active contours that are based on level sets [119, 150, 302, 316, 422] allowing for arbitrary shapes and topologies. More recent approaches [60, 92, 94, 312, 377], as cited above, are based on segmentation maps as a generic discrete shape representation.

6.2.3 An adaptive, pixel-based tracking approach

Our approach, called PixelTrack [5, 34], is inspired by works on combined tracking and segmentation, which proved to be beneficial for tracking non-rigid objects while reducing the risk of model drift as opposed to template-based approaches. Furthermore, local descriptors have shown state-of-the-art performance due to their capability of handling appearance changes with large object deformations as well as partial occlusions.
6.2. Tracking deformable objects

6.2.3.1 Overview

We integrated these concepts and developed a novel tracking-by-detection algorithm illustrated in Fig. 6.1. The algorithm receives as input the current video frame as well as the bounding box and segmentation from the tracking result of the previous frame. A pixel-based Hough transform is applied on each pixel inside the search window, where each pixel votes for the centre position of the object according to the learnt model, which gives the most likely position of the object’s centre. Then, the pixels that have contributed to the maximum vote are selected. This process is called backprojection. In parallel, a pixel-based probabilistic segmentation of the image in the search window is obtained with a colour-based model, and this segmentation is used to compute a long-term shape model. The position of the tracked object is updated using the maximum vote position, the centre of mass of the segmentation output, and the shape model. Finally, the models are adapted in a co-training manner to avoid drift. In the following, each of the processing steps is explained in more detail.

6.2.3.2 Pixel-based Hough Voting

We developed a new detection algorithm relying on the generalised Hough transform [79]. In contrast to existing models developed recently for similar tasks (e.g., [154, 162]) which use Hough forests, i.e., Random Forests trained on small image patches, or the Implicit Shape Model (ISM) [233], our method operates at the pixel level.

This has the following advantages:

- pixel-based descriptors are more suitable for detecting objects that are extremely small in the image (e.g., for far-field vision),
- the feature space is relatively small and does not depend on spatial neighbourhood, which makes training and updating of the model easier and more coherent with the object’s appearance changes,
- the training and the application of the detector is extremely fast, as the complete feature space is relatively small and can be implemented with look-up tables.

Let us now consider the model creation and application in detail. Figure 6.2 illustrates the model creation (training) and the detection process.
**Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects**

**Training:** The detector is trained on the first video frame. Let us denote \( x = (x_1, x_2) \) the position of a pixel \( I(x) \) in an image \( I \). In the training image, the pixels inside a given initial bounding box \( B_0 = (b_{0x}, b_{0y}, b_{0w}, b_{0h}) \) are quantised according to the vector composed of its HSV colour values and its gradient orientation (see Fig. 6.2 left). This amounts to computing \( D = D_z \) (\( z = 1..N \)), an N-dimensional distribution similar to a histogram, which is referred to as *pixel-based Hough model* in the following. The vectors \( D_z = \{d^1_z, \ldots, d^M_z\} \) contain \( M_z \) displacement vectors \( d^m_z = (x^m_z, w^m_z) \), each associated with a weight \( w^m_z = 1.0 \). Thus, training consists in constructing \( D \) by traversing each pixel \( I(x) \) inside the bounding box \( B_0 \), quantising the pixel value as \( z = z_x \), computing a displacement vector \( x_z = (b_{0x} - x_1, b_{0y} - x_2) \) pointing to the centre of the bounding box: \( (b_{0x}, b_{0y}) \) (illustrated by arrows in Fig. 6.2), and finally adding the vector \( d_z = (x_z, 1.0) \) to the set \( D_z \).

**Detection:** in a new video frame, the object can be detected by letting each pixel \( I(x) \) inside the search window vote according to \( D_z \) corresponding to its quantised value \( z_x \). The right part of Fig. 6.2 illustrates this. Each vote is a list of displacements \( d^m_z \) that are weighted by \( w_{zm} \) and cumulated in a voting map. The detector’s output is then simply the position in the voting map with the maximum value \( x_{max} \).

**Backprojection:** we can determine how much each pixel inside the search window \( \Omega_t \) contributed to the maximum value of the voting map \( x_{max} \). This process is illustrated in Fig. 6.1 and is called *backprojection*. More precisely, let \( z \) be the quantised value of pixel \( I(x) \). Then, the backprojection \( b \) at each position \( x \in \Omega_t \) is defined as:

\[
b_x = \begin{cases} 
    w_{zm} & \text{if } \exists d^m_z \in D_z \text{ s.t. } (b^x, b^y) + x_{zm} = x_{max}, \\
    0 & \text{otherwise},
\end{cases} 
\]  

(6.1)

where \( (b^x, b^y) \) is the top-left corner of the current bounding box.
6.2.3.3 Segmentation

Complementary to the local pixel-wise Hough model, a probabilistic soft segmentation approach is adopted, similar to the ones from Aeschliman et al. [60], Čehovin et al. [377] or [312]. Let \( c_{x,t} \in \{0,1\} \) be the class of the pixel at position \( x \) at time \( t \): 0 for background, and 1 for foreground, and let \( y_{x,0:t} \) be the pixel’s colour observations from time 1 to \( t \). For clarity and as pixels are independent in our approach, we will drop the index \( x \) in the following. In order to incorporate the segmentation of the previous video frame at time \( t-1 \) and to make the estimation more robust, we use a recursive Bayesian formulation, where, at time \( t \),

\[
p(c_t = 1|y_{0:t}) = Z^{-1}p(y_t|c_t = 1) \sum_{c_{t-1}' = 1} p(c_t = 1|c_{t-1}') p(c_{t-1}'|y_{0:t-1}) ,
\]

where \( Z \) is a normalisation constant that makes the probabilities sum up to 1. The distributions \( p(y_t|c_t) \) are represented with HSV colour histograms. At \( t = 0 \), the foreground histogram is initialised from the pixels in the image region defined by the bounding box around the object in the first frame. The background histogram is initialised from the image region surrounding this rectangle. The transition probabilities for foreground and background are set to:

\[
p(c_t = 0|c_{t-1}) = 0.6 \quad p(c_t = 1|c_{t-1}) = 0.4 .
\]

As opposed to recent work on image segmentation (e.g. [324]), we treat each pixel independently, which, in general, leads to a less regularised solution but at the same time reduces the computational complexity considerably.

6.2.3.4 Shape Model

The segmentation gives a rough estimate of the current 2D shape of the tracked object in the image (see step (3) in Fig. 6.1). We use this estimate to gradually construct a non-parametric longer-term shape model (step (4) in Fig. 6.1), which further helps in the overall tracking, especially for less deforming, i.e. more rigid, objects. The segmentation output is the posterior probability of \( x \) belonging to the foreground: \( p(c_{x,t} = 1|y_{x,0:t}) \). By computing this for all \( x \) inside the current search window \( \Omega_t \), we obtain a 2D segmentation map of the size of \( \Omega_t \). The shape \( s_{x,t} \) at time \( t \) is then recursively estimated as:

\[
s_{x,t} = \lambda \phi(p(c_{x',t} = 1|y_{0:t})) + (1 - \lambda)s_{x,t-1} \quad \forall x \in \Omega^s,
\]

where \( \phi(\cdot) \) re-samples the segmentation map to a canonical size \( \Omega^s = \Omega_0 \) (i.e. the initial search window size), and \( \lambda = 0.02 \) is a small update factor. The shape model is initialised at the first frame with \( s_{x,0} = \phi(p(c_{x',t} = 1|y_0)) \). It constitutes a scale-invariant discretised representation of the 2D shape of the object. Figure 6.3 shows illustrations of the automatically learnt object shape prior models for some of our evaluation videos.

6.2.3.5 Tracking

In a new video frame, pixel-based detection and segmentation are performed inside a search window \( \Omega_t \), which we set to \( \eta = 1.5 \) times the size of the object’s bounding box. Then, the long-term shape model is updated and the new object’s position \( X_t = (b^x_t, b^y_t) \) and size \( (b^w_t, b^h_t) \) can be re-estimated. To this end, we utilise not only the output of the detector, i.e. the maximum
Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects

Figure 6.3: Some examples of on-line learnt shape prior models of the videos “ball”, “torus”, “fish2”, “mountainbike”, “trellis”, and “woman”.

position in the voting map, but also the segmentation and shape model, as described in the following. Clearly, this makes the tracking algorithm more robust to non-rigid deformations.

**Segmentation map tracking:** to infer an estimate of the object’s position from the current segmentation, we calculate the centre of mass of the soft segmentation produced by Eq. 6.2:

\[
\mathbf{x}_s = \frac{1}{S} \sum_{\mathbf{x} \in \Omega_t} p(c_x = 1|y) \mathbf{x},
\]

where \( S \) is the sum of all foreground probabilities \( p(c_x = 1|y) \) in the search window \( \Omega_t \).

**Shape correlation:** we further exploit the longer-term shape model for tracking the object’s position by computing the cross-correlation between the shape “map” and the segmentation map (scaled to the same size by \( \phi \)):

\[
\mathbf{x}_p = \arg\max_{\mathbf{x}} \sum_{\delta \in \mathcal{I}} \phi(p(c_{x,t} = 1|y_{x,t}; 0:t)) \delta \mathbf{x} + \delta t,
\]

with \( \mathcal{I} \) describing the offset in the image, i.e. a discrete 2D displacement of the shape map within some reasonable bounds. Thus, we match the current shape model with the segmentation map in order to obtain a position estimate.

**Overall tracking result:** At each frame, the new object position is set to a linear combination of the voting map maximum \( \mathbf{x}_{max} \) and the mean of segmentation and shape positions \( \mathbf{x}_s \) and \( \mathbf{x}_p \):

\[
\mathbf{X}_t = (b^x_t, b^y_t) = \alpha \frac{\mathbf{x}_s + \mathbf{x}_p}{2} + (1 - \alpha)\mathbf{x}_{max}.
\]

The factor \( \alpha \) determines how much we trust in the segmentation/shape position compared to the Hough model’s estimation. It is computed dynamically at each frame by a simple reliability measure that is defined as the proportion of pixels in the search window \( \Omega_t \) that change from foreground to background or vice versa, i.e. crossing the threshold \( p(c_x = 1|y) = 0.5 \).

We further re-estimate the overall scale of the object at each frame using a recursive probabilistic inference. See [5] for more details.

### 6.2.3.6 Model adaptation

Both pixel-based Hough model and segmentation model are updated at each frame in a co-training manner, i.e. the output of one model is used to update the other one. To update the Hough model, only foreground pixels are used, that is pixels for which \( p(c_x = 1|y) > 0.5 \). For
6.2. Tracking deformable objects

each of these pixels \( x \) the displacement \( d \) to the new object’s centre is calculated, and its weight \( w \) is set according to its foreground probability:

\[
w \leftarrow \begin{cases} \gamma p(c_x = 1 | y) + (1 - \gamma) w & \text{if } d \in D_z, \\ p(c_x = 1 | y) & \text{otherwise,} \end{cases}
\]

where \( \gamma = 0.1 \) is the update factor. In the second case (i.e. if \( d \notin D_z \)), \( d \) is added to \( D_z \).

For computational and memory efficiency, we limit the size of each \( D_z \) and only keep the \( K \) displacements with the highest weights (\( K = 20 \) in our experiments).

The foreground and background distributions of the segmentation model are adapted using the backprojection \( b_x \). That is, the colour distribution \( p(y | b > 0.5) \) of the backprojected pixels is calculated, and used to linearly update the current foreground colour distribution:

\[
p(y | c_t = 1) = \delta p(y | b > 0.5) + (1 - \delta) p(y_{t-1} | c_{t-1} = 1),
\]

where \( \delta = 0.1 \) is the update factor. The background colour distribution is updated in the same way but using the colour distribution from a rectangular frame surrounding the object borders (as for the initialisation step).

6.2.4 Experiments

We conducted quantitative evaluation on two sets of challenging standard videos that are commonly used in the literature: the “Babenko sequences” [74] and the “Non-rigid object dataset” [162], as well as the public tracking benchmark VOT2014 [218]. The tracking accuracy and speed on these datasets has been measured and compared to several state-of-the-art tracking methods.

Using the first two datasets, we compared our algorithm, called PixelTrack+, to 11 state-of-the-art methods: HoughTrack (HT) [162], Tracking-Learning-Detection (TLD) (CVPR version) [204], Incremental Visual Tracker (IVT) [323], the Multiple Instance Learning tracker (MIL) (CVPR version) [74], the \( \ell_1 \) tracker using the Accelerated Proximal Gradient method (\( \ell_1 \) APG) [80], the structured output tracker: Struck (ICCV version) [175], Multi-Level Quantisation tracker (MQT) [191], the Deep Learning Tracker (DLT) [391], MEEM [430], DSST [127] and MUSTer [192].

To measure the performance of the different tracking algorithms, we determine, for each video, the proportion of frames in which the object is correctly tracked. And, to measure the tracking precision, we computed the average Normalised Centre Error (NCE) on each video, i.e. the Euclidean distance between the ground truth rectangle’s centre and the corresponding tracked bounding box in a frame. Table 6.1 summarises the results. Although our method is not designed for grey-scale videos and, thus, does not show its full potential, it still performs better on average than most of the state-of-the-art methods. Only MEEM outperforms PixelTrack+ on both measures. DSST and MUSTer also generally have a higher proportion of successfully tracked frames as they rely less on colour segmentation which is not useful in grey-scale videos.

For the VOT2014 data, we followed the evaluation protocol of the benchmark [219], using the accuracy (same as our correctly tracked frame measure above) and the robustness (number of tracking failures). Figure 6.4 shows the accuracy-robustness plots for the baseline experiment of the VOT2014 benchmark [218] comparing 33 state-of-the-art tracking methods. Our method

\textsuperscript{4}http://vision.ucsd.edu/ bbabenko/project_mittrack.html

\textsuperscript{5}http://lbs.icg.tugraz.at/research/houghtrack/

\textsuperscript{6}http://votchallenge.net/
Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>algorithm</th>
<th>HT</th>
<th>TLD</th>
<th>IVT</th>
<th>MIL</th>
<th>$\ell_1$ APG</th>
<th>Struck</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Babenko</td>
<td>0.65 / 0.55</td>
<td>0.70 / 0.23</td>
<td>0.61 / 0.29</td>
<td>0.63 / 0.31</td>
<td>0.76 / 0.29</td>
<td>0.86 / 0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-rigid</td>
<td>0.79 / 0.23</td>
<td>0.55 / 0.26</td>
<td>0.55 / 0.32</td>
<td>0.71 / 0.24</td>
<td>0.56 / 0.32</td>
<td>0.74 / 0.26</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>MQT</th>
<th>DLT</th>
<th>MEEM</th>
<th>DSST</th>
<th>MUSTer</th>
<th>ours</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.54 / 0.54</td>
<td>0.84 / 0.21</td>
<td>0.91 / 0.18</td>
<td>0.89 / 0.44</td>
<td>0.90 / 0.23</td>
<td>0.86 / 0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.73 / 0.19</td>
<td>0.66 / 0.24</td>
<td>0.83 / 0.28</td>
<td>0.66 / 0.28</td>
<td>0.74 / 0.32</td>
<td>0.90 / 0.18</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 6.1: Babenko and Non-rigid objects sequences: proportion of correctly tracked frames (1st number), and Normalised Centre Error (NCE) (2nd number).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>algorithm</th>
<th>HT</th>
<th>TLD</th>
<th>IVT</th>
<th>MIL</th>
<th>$\ell_1$ APG</th>
<th>Struck</th>
<th>MQT</th>
<th>DLT</th>
<th>MEEM</th>
<th>DSST</th>
<th>MUSTer</th>
<th>ours</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>speed</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>8.4</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>7.1</td>
<td>9.9</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>59.4</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>44.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 6.2: Comparison of the average processing speed in frames per second.

compares favourably with the top performing methods, especially in terms of robustness. Superior in terms of accuracy and robustness are only PLT, a structured output SVM-based tracker, DGT [104], that tracks super-pixels using graph-matching, and MatFlow [272], a key-point-based approach. Correlation filter-based approaches like DSST [127] show a very high accuracy but slightly lower robustness.

Figure 6.5 shows tracking results of PixelTrack+ compared to several state-of-the-art methods for some very challenging videos.

Finally, we measured the average processing speed of each algorithm for the 19 videos of the first two datasets on a 3.4 GHz Intel Xeon processor (using a single core). The results are shown in Table 6.2. The execution speed of the proposed method is at least 3 times faster than most of the other state-of-the-art methods, except for DSST which is slightly faster.

6.2.5 Conclusion

We designed a fast algorithm for tracking generic deformable objects in videos without any prior knowledge, i.e. without any learnt appearance model of the object or the surrounding scene and without any specific motion model. It is an effective combination of a pixel-based detector based on a Hough voting scheme and a global probabilistic segmentation method that operate jointly and update each other in a co-training manner. Moreover, a novel long-term non-parametric shape model has been proposed to further improve the robustness of the approach. Our algorithm has two strengths compared to existing state-of-the-art methods: firstly, using a pixel-wise soft segmentation it is able to track objects that are highly deformable, such as articulated objects, as well as objects that undergo large in-plane and out-of-plane rotations. And secondly, it is very fast, which makes it suitable for real-time applications, or tasks where many objects need to be tracked at the same time, or where large amounts of data need to be processed (e.g. video indexation). Our experimental results show that the method outperforms state-of-the-art tracking algorithms on challenging videos from standard benchmarks.
6.2. Tracking deformable objects

Figure 6.4: Comparison with 33 state-of-the-art methods of the VOT2014 benchmark [218]. The proposed method “PTp” is among the top-performing methods with the fifth-best robustness.

Figure 6.5: Tracking results of DLT [391], MEEM [430], DSST [127], MUSTer [192] and the proposed PixelTrack+ on some of the more challenging videos from the non-rigid object dataset and the VOT2014 benchmark (best viewed in colour).
6.3 On-line learning of motion context

6.3.1 Introduction

As experimental results show, the previous work addressed well the problem of tracker drift and is able to learn on-line a stable appearance model in dynamic environments. However, when analysing the behaviour and the results of our tracking algorithms and the ones from the literature, we realised that there are still certain failure modes, e.g., certain situations that have not been considered in the design of these algorithms. One of these situations is when, in the background, there are very similar objects to the one(s) that we want to track, and when one or several of these distracting objects comes close to it. Then many algorithms might lose track and “jump” to the image region corresponding to the most similar object. This happens, for instance, when tracking a person in sports videos or an animal in a herd or swarm. Thus, in a SOT problem, it seems important to not only consider the object to track but also its global environment.

For this reason, together with Christophe Garcia, we studied methods to incorporate the context of the visual scene into the tracking process. In many practical applications, the camera is moving. Thus, the background and the visual context is also changing over time. Therefore, we adopted again an on-line learning approach in order to be able to dynamically adapt to new environments and situations. In contrast to the tracking-by-detection method PixelTrack+ described in the previous section, we opted here for a probabilistic Bayesian approach, as it allows for a straightforward integration and combination of different appearance models and observation likelihoods as well as motion models, and for an effective inference with particle filtering.

6.3.2 State of the art

One of the first works to explicitly include context in visual object tracking has been the Context-Aware Tracker (CAT) by Yang et al. [414]. Their method operates on-line throughout the video and continuously discovers objects that move in the same direction as the tracked object by performing a motion correlation analysis. These auxiliary objects help to support and improve tracking by performing inference in a star-structured graphical model that includes the objects’ states. Similarly, Zhang et al. [431] modelled the spatio-temporal relationships and correlations between the object and its locally dense contexts in a Bayesian framework.

Spatial context has also been exploited by using supporters, i.e., other objects or feature points around the target in the image. For example, this may be useful in videos, where a hand holds the object to track and thus exhibits the same visible motion pattern. Or when groups of people walk in the same direction. Grabner et al. [167], for example, extended the well-known Implicit Shape Model by detecting feature points in the image that have a correlated motion with the target. These supporters are matched from frame to frame, and their relative displacement vectors are updated on-line. Wen et al. [399] also proposed a method that detects supporters (here called contributors) which are interest points within a local neighbourhood around the target, in order to improve the tracking performance. In addition, their method makes use of a longer-term temporal context using an on-line sub-space learning method that groups together observations from several frames. Similarly, the approach proposed by Sun et al. [362] tracks “helper” objects using an on-line Adaboost detector, initialised manually at the first frame. Their relative position is learnt on-line and used to predict the target object’s position.

Dinh et al. [136] proposed a method using supporters as well as distractors, which are objects with similar appearance to the target. The distractors help to avoid confusion of the tracker with
other similar objects in the scene, and they can possibly be used to reason about the objects’ mutual occlusion. In the work of Dinh et al., supporters are not used directly for the target’s state estimation but only to disambiguate between the target and its distractors. Hong et al. [190] recently proposed an approach based on the $\ell_1$ tracker [277] that deals with distractors by automatically learning a metric not only between positive and negative examples but also within the collected negative examples, effectively replacing the originally proposed Euclidean distance. Finally, Supančić and Ramanan [363] presented a self-paced learning tracker that also selects training examples from video frames in the past to perform long-term tracking, an idea that has also been used in the recent work of Hua et al. [195].

The disadvantage with using supporting and distracting objects is that several objects need to be detected and tracked, which can be computationally expensive especially with a larger number of objects. Moreover, the success or failure of data association or, in some methods, matching local features points in successive video frames, heavily depends on the type of object to track and the surrounding background. This process can be error-prone and, in some situations, may rather harm the overall tracking performance. Finally, modelling the spatial, temporal, or appearance-based pairwise relationships between objects and/or interest points can lead to a combinatorial explosion and make the inference on the state space difficult.

To alleviate this problem, in this work, we propose a probabilistic method that dynamically updates the foreground and background model depending on distracting objects or image regions in the scene background. This contextual appearance information is extracted from moving image regions and used to train on-line a discriminative binary classifier that, in each video frame, detects the image region corresponding to the object to track.

Traditionally, these discriminative on-line classifiers used in tracking-by-detection approaches [74, 154, 162, 165, 175, 277] learn negative examples extracted from the image region surrounding the current target object region. This choice is motivated by the fact that the object will move only slightly from one frame to the other w.r.t. the background or other objects, and by computational speed. In contrast, our method uses a stochastic sampling process to extract negative examples from image regions that move. We call these: contextual motion cues (see Fig. 6.6). In that way, regions that correspond to possibly distracting objects are detected efficiently and early, i.e. without them having to be inside a search window and without scanning the whole image at each point in time.

6.3.3 Tracking framework with discriminative classifier

In this work, we used a traditional recursive Bayesian model for tracking and a particle filter, i.e. sampling importance resampling (SIR) or bootstrapping, for the inference [139, 198]. As we already described the principal model before (c.f. section 5.2.3 for MOT and section 5.3.3 for SOT), we only concentrate on the original parts and on our contributions, i.e. the on-line learning of a discriminative classifier using motion context cues and its integration in the particle filter framework using an effective likelihood model and proposal functions.

6.3.3.1 Object state representation and inference

The state $X = (x, y, v_x, v_y, s, e) \in \mathbb{R}^6$ of the object to track is described by an upright bounding box defined by the object’s centre position $(x, y)$ in the image, its 2D speed $(v_x, v_y)$ in the image plane, scale $(s)$, and eccentricity $(e)$, i.e. the ratio of height and width. The state $X_0$ is initialised manually by providing a bounding box around the object in the first frame. Then, for each video frame, the particle filter performs its classical steps of predicting particles $X^{(i)}$ sampled from
the proposal distribution \( q(X_t | X_{t-1}) \) and updating their weights according to the observation likelihood \( p(Y_t | X_t) \), state dynamics \( p_m(X_t | X_{t-1}) \) and proposal (see Section 6.3.3.2): 
\[
    w_i = p(Y_t | X_t) \frac{p_m(X_t | X_{t-1})}{q(X_t | X_{t-1})},
\]
for each particle \( i \in 1..N \). At the end of each iteration, the observation likelihood model parameters are updated using the mean of the posterior distribution \( p(X_t | Y_{1:t}) \). And finally, systematic resampling is performed.

6.3.3.2 State dynamics and proposal function

In order to cope with fairly complex motion of arbitrary objects in videos from a possibly moving camera, we used a proposal function composed of a mixture of three distributions:
\[
    q(X_t | X_{t-1}) = \beta_m p_m(X_t | X_{t-1}) + \beta_f p_f(X_t | X_{t-1}) + \beta_d p_d(X_t | X_{t-1}),
\]
(6.9)
where \( \beta_m, \beta_f, \beta_d < 1 \) define the mixture weights (\( \sum_i \beta_i = 1 \)), and \( p_m(X_t | X_{t-1}) \) is the state dynamics model (similar to the ones in sections 5.2.3.2 and 5.3.3), \( p_f(X_t | X_{t-1}) \) is an optical flow-like motion-based proposal function, and \( p_d(X_t | X_{t-1}) \) proposes states coming from a discriminative on-line trained detector described in more detail in section 6.3.4.

6.3.3.3 Observation likelihood

The observation likelihood function \( p(Y | X) \) that we proposed is designed to be robust against object deformations, pose and illumination changes as well as partial occlusions. It is a geometric mean of three distributions corresponding to different visual cues:
\[
    p(Y_t | X_t) = (p_H(Y_t | X_t) p_S(Y_t | X_t) p_T(Y_t | X_t))^{1/3},
\]
(6.10)
where \( p_H \) computes a local colour histogram likelihood ratio, \( p_S \) measures the global colour distribution similarity, and \( p_T \) is a texture likelihood based on the on-line learnt discriminative classifier that we will explain in the following section. Taking the cube root of the product ensures that the overall likelihood distribution does not become too peaked. For more details, refer to [6].

6.3.4 Model adaptation with contextual cues

In this section, we will describe the main contribution of the proposed approach: a method to exploit motion context effectively for visual object tracking using a discriminative classifier that is trained on-line on specific parts of the input video. Our approach is different from previous work, where motion context or background motion has been integrated tightly in the tracking process (e.g., in [160, 293]), or where specific appearance models are used to avoid distractions in the background [136, 190].

In our particle filter framework outlined above, we used a binary discriminative classifier based on the On-line Adaboost (OAB) algorithm [165] (based on Haar-like features) for proposing new particles as well as for evaluating the observation likelihood. Any other on-line classifier could have been used as well. The classifier is trained with the first video frame using the image patch inside the object’s bounding box as a positive example and surrounding patches within a search window as negative examples (as we cannot infer motion from a single image). Then, the classifier is updated at each tracking iteration using the same strategy for extracting positive and negative examples. We refer to [165] for details on the model and how it is trained.
6.3. On-line learning of motion context

Figure 6.6: Illustration of different sampling strategies of negative examples (blue). Left: traditional sampling at fixed positions within a search window (red). Middle: the motion probability density function $m$ (Eq. 6.11). Right: the proposed negative sampling from $m$.

6.3.4.1 Background sampling

We propose to sample negative examples from image regions that contain motion and thus likely correspond to moving objects (see Fig. 6.6). The idea is that these regions may distract the tracker at some point in time. Therefore, it is preferable to incorporate these distracting image regions in the classifier training in the form of negative examples and learn them as early as possible, i.e. as soon as they appear in the scene. One can see this as a kind of long-term prediction of possible negative samples, in contrast to the much shorter (frame-by-frame) time scale of the proposal function. To perform this negative sampling, we first compensate for camera motion between two consecutive frames using a classical parametric motion estimation approach [292]. We apply a three-parameter model to estimate the translation and scale factor between the images, and then compute the intensity differences for each pixel in the current image with its corresponding pixel in the previous frame. This gives an image $M(x, y)$ approximating the amount of motion present at each position $(x, y)$ of the current frame of the video. We then transform this image into a probability density function (PDF) $m(x, y)$ over the 2-dimensional image space:

$$m(x, y) = Z^{-1} \sum_{(u,v) \in \Omega(x,y)} M(u, v), \quad (6.11)$$

where $\Omega(x, y)$ defines an image region of the size of the bounding box of the object being tracked, centred at $(x, y)$, and $Z$ is a constant normalising the density function to sum up to 1. Thus, $m(x, y)$ represents the relative amount of motion inside the region centred at $(x, y)$. Finally, $N^-$ image positions $(x, y)$ are sampled from this PDF corresponding to rectangles centred at $(x, y)$. That is, statistically, regions with high amount of motion are sampled more often than static image regions. This process is illustrated in Fig. 6.6.

6.3.4.2 Classifier update

The $N^-$ image patches corresponding to the sampled regions as well as the positive example coming from the mean particle of the tracker are then used to update the classifier. In this case, the OAB method needs a balanced number of positives and negatives, thus the positive example is used $N^-$ times, alternating positive and negative updates.

The advantage of sampling positions from these motion cues is that we do not need to care about explicitly detecting, initialising, tracking, and eventually removing a certain number of distracting objects at each point in time. Note that we could also sample regions of different scales but as scale does not change rapidly in most videos the benefit of this is relatively small.
Table 6.3: Average percentage of correctly tracked frames with the proposed method using different negative sampling strategies.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>fixed</th>
<th>fixed+random</th>
<th>motion</th>
<th>fixed+motion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Babenko</td>
<td>73.28</td>
<td>74.06</td>
<td>82.30</td>
<td>85.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-rigid</td>
<td>68.71</td>
<td>70.30</td>
<td>74.29</td>
<td>80.87</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note also that the PDF could as well include appearance similarity with the tracked target. However, this would considerably increase the computational complexity.

6.3.5 Experiments

We performed a quantitative evaluation of our proposed approach, that we called “Motion Context Tracker” (MCT), on four challenging public tracking datasets: the Babenko and Non-rigid object sequences also used to evaluate our PixelTrack+ method, described in the previous section, and the VOT2013 and the VOT2014 datasets. Again, we measured the accuracy (≡ the percentage of correctly tracked frames) and the robustness (≡ number of tracking failures).

In the first experiments, we evaluated different strategies for the collection of negative examples of the discriminative OAB classifier, as explained in Section 6.3.4. We compared four different strategies:

- **fixed**: $N^-$ negatives are taken from fixed positions around the positive example inside the search window, which is twice the size of the object’s bounding box.
- **fixed+random**: $N^-/2$ examples are taken from fixed position (as for “fixed”), and $N^-/2$ examples are sampled from random image positions.
- **motion**: $N^-$ negative examples are sampled from the contextual motion distribution $m$ (Eq. 6.11).
- **fixed+motion**: $N^-/2$ examples are taken from fixed positions, and $N^-/2$ examples are sampled from the contextual motion distribution.

In any case, the negative examples do not overlap more than 70% with the positive ones in the image. Table 6.3 shows the results for the first two datasets in terms of the percentage of correctly tracked frames. On average, the best strategy is “fixed+motion”, with a relative improvement of around 7.5%.

Using the VOT2013 benchmark, we compared MCT with 27 other state-of-the-art tracking methods. Table 6.4 lists the top 7 ranks for the experiments baseline, region-noise (i.e. with perturbed initial bounding boxes), and greyscale (i.e. videos converted to grey-scale), combining accuracy and robustness. The results of MCT are very competitive, being the second-best method for baseline and region-noise and the third-best for greyscale. We also added the method PF (MCT without the detector) to the VOT2013 evaluation. Its overall ranks for the baseline, region-noise, and greyscale experiments are 16.1, 14.5, and 14.4 respectively. This clearly shows that the benefit of the motion context-based discriminative classifier.

Finally, Table 6.5 lists the 10 best methods for VOT2014 and the respective accuracy ranks, robustness ranks, and overall ranks. Overall, the results of our MCT approach are very competitive. Taking the average of accuracy and robustness ranks, PLT and its extension PLT_{14} are still slightly better, as well as the correlation filter-based method SAMF [413], and the method...
### 6.3. On-line learning of motion context

Table 6.4: Overall ranking result with the VOT2013 dataset. Only the first 7 out of 28 ranks are shown.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Baseline</th>
<th>Region-noise</th>
<th>Greyscale</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PLT</td>
<td>4.96</td>
<td>3.58</td>
<td>3.96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MCT</td>
<td>6.62</td>
<td>5.08</td>
<td>6.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FoT [384]</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>8.33</td>
<td>MCT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EDFT [146]</td>
<td>9.5</td>
<td>9.04</td>
<td>EDFT [146]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCMS</td>
<td>9.54</td>
<td>9.04</td>
<td>GSCT [155]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LGT++ [408]</td>
<td>10.2</td>
<td>9.08</td>
<td>LGT++ [408]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DFT [336]</td>
<td>11.1</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>Matrioska [272]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 6.5: Overall ranking result with the VOT2014 dataset. Only the first 10 out of 39 ranks are shown.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Accuracy rank</th>
<th>Robustness rank</th>
<th>Overall rank</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SAMF [413]</td>
<td>8.16</td>
<td>16.49</td>
<td>12.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PLT</td>
<td>14.28</td>
<td>10.41</td>
<td>12.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DGT [104]</td>
<td>11.42</td>
<td>13.44</td>
<td>12.43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PLT_14</td>
<td>17.46</td>
<td>10.77</td>
<td>14.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MCT</td>
<td>13.52</td>
<td>14.76</td>
<td>14.14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PF</td>
<td>13.70</td>
<td>14.74</td>
<td>14.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DSST [127]</td>
<td>13.51</td>
<td>15.54</td>
<td>14.53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KCF [182]</td>
<td>13.62</td>
<td>16.82</td>
<td>15.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HMMTxD [218]</td>
<td>13.18</td>
<td>17.57</td>
<td>15.38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MatFlow [272]</td>
<td>16.90</td>
<td>15.29</td>
<td>16.10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

DGT [104] which relies on graph matching and super-pixel representations. The method PF, i.e. MCT without the discriminative classifier, is only slightly worse on average with this benchmark. This might be due to the more challenging type of videos with deformable objects for which the texture-based classifier is not powerful enough.

In terms of execution speed, our algorithm runs at around 20fps for a frame size of $320 \times 240$ on an Intel Xeon 3.4GHz (single core).

### 6.3.6 Conclusion

We proposed a new efficient particle filter-based approach for tracking arbitrary objects in videos. The method combines generative and discriminative models, by effectively integrating an on-line learning classifier. We introduced a new method to train this classifier that samples the position of negative examples from contextual motion cues instead of a fixed region around the tracked object. Our extensive experimental results show that this procedure improves the overall tracking performance with different discriminative classification algorithms. Further, the proposed tracking algorithm gives state-of-the-art results on four different challenging tracking datasets, effectively dealing with large object shape and appearance changes, as well as complex motion, varying illumination conditions and partial occlusions. Note that we also officially participated in the VOT2014 challenge [32] and the associated workshop held in conjunction
with ECCV 2014 [31]. As can be seen from the results (c.f. 6.5), our MCT method achieved an excellent position in the ranking.

In summary, we have shown experimentally that dynamically integrating context information from the visual scene using on-line learning can largely improve the overall performance of the tracking algorithm. In the following section, we will outline our research work that develops this idea further by constructing finer global scene context models in an on-line manner.

6.4 Dynamic adaptation to scene context

6.4.1 Introduction

In this section, I will present our research work performed in the context of the PhD thesis of Salma Moujtahid [23, 28, 29, 283]. We worked on another approach of including contextual scene or background information in the tracking process, and we applied it to the SOT scenario, as in the previous section. However, here, scene context is not used for the on-line learning of robust appearance models, as with MCT, but for a dynamic selection of trackers among a set of methods depending on their suitability for the given environment at each point in time.

Many tracking algorithms have been proposed in the literature, and each of them has strengths and weaknesses depending on the appearance, motion or state models or the type of inference.

Our assumption was that their performance varies in different types of settings and environments and, thus, for a given context, we would be able to select the algorithm and model that is most appropriate. As these variations might occur not only from one type of video or application to another but also within a given video stream, we developed a method that dynamically selects one tracker from a pool of supposedly complementary trackers depending on the scene context at a given point in time. To this end, we conceived a set of general scene context features, and we extracted these features from each frame of a set of training videos. Then, a classifier was trained (off-line) on these features to predict which tracker is the most suitable for a given moment in the video. Finally, we proposed an original tracking framework that selects the most appropriate tracker at each frame based on this classifier. In the following, we will describe this approach in more detail.

6.4.2 State of the art

Many ways of combining, fusing or selecting visual models or features for tracking exist in the literature. They can be categorised into low-level and high-level fusion approaches.

6.4.2.1 Low-level fusion

Fusion at a low level means the combination of multiple visual features in a single tracking model. Early works like the one from Birchfield et al. [95] used the sum of colour histograms and intensity gradient likelihoods. Collins et al. [122] also used likelihood maps to rank features and select the most discriminant ones. Triesh et al. [369] weight features in other to fuse them in a democratic integration for face tracking. A Bayesian framework introduced by Yilmaz et al. [422] fuses probabilistic density functions based on texture and colour features for object contour tracking. Other existing works (e.g. [305, 349, 423]) fuse different modalities, like motion or shape, in order to improve the overall foreground-background discrimination. The low-level fusion of features might lead to problems because of the interdependence of the features in the
6.4. Dynamic adaptation to scene context

6.4.2.2 High-level fusion

Other approaches consider the combination of the output of multiple trackers. For example, a probabilistic combination was proposed by Leichter et al. [234] with multiple synchronous trackers using different features where each tracker estimates a probability density function of the tracked state. A sampling framework is introduced by Kwon et al. [222, 223] integrating estimates from basic complementary trackers using different observation models and motion models. Moreover, tracker performance within a parallel framework can be measured as the disagreement of a tracker with respect to the other trackers. Li et al. [244] exploited this idea to seek a balance between the trackers. The recent work by Khalid et al. [212] fuses the output of multiple trackers based on their estimated individual performance and the spatio-temporal relationships of their results. Using the object trajectory as a fusion criteria is another possibility. For example, Bailer et al. [76] used trajectory optimisation to fuse the tracking results (bounding boxes) from different tracking algorithms. Wang et al. [392] also modelled the object trajectory and the reliability of each of five independent trackers combining them with a factorial Hidden Markov Model (HMM). More recently, Vojir et al. [383] also utilised a HMM to fuse observations from complementary trackers and a detector. The HMM’s latent states correspond to a binary vector expressing the failure of the individual trackers.

In a different manner, rather than using multiple trackers with different cues, Zhang et al. [430] retain snapshots of a base tracker (an on-line SVM) in time, constituting an ensemble of its past models. Then a model is restored according to an entropy criterion.

In terms of tracker selection rather than fusion, our previous work [29] presented a simple selection framework using the trackers confidences and a spatio-temporal criteria. Similarly Stenger et al. [351] also used confidences to select the best tracker applied to face tracking. The main advantage of selection algorithms is that the resulting tracking output is not altered by one or more trackers that may have drifted as long as they are not selected.

In contrast to these fusion frameworks, our proposed selection framework does not rely solely on the performance or tracking results of our trackers. It differs essentially in the use of the scene context in the decision of selecting the most suitable tracker at each point in time. Moreover, selecting from a pool of independent trackers allows to adapt to rapid scene changes and quickly switch between different models.

6.4.2.3 Context in tracking

Scene context has been used previously in visual tracking and detection. Especially in on-line detection or tracking scenarios, where information for model construction is very limited to the number of frames, context can provide important information and greatly improve the performance. Context can be used in many ways. As mentioned in section 6.3.2, some works (e.g. [167, 399, 414, 431]) use “supporters”, i.e. image regions or interest points moving similarly to the tracked object and assisting the tracking, or “distractors” [136, 190], i.e. image regions with similar appearance to the object, in order to avoid confusion in tracking. However, the modelling of spatial and temporal relationships between the different tracked objects or interest points is computationally expensive, due to the more complex data association. In a different manner, Maggio et al. [270] used contextual event cues such as target births (objects entering the scene) and spatial clutter of objects. The spatial distribution of these events is incrementally
learned using tracker feedback for MOT.

In our approach, supporters, distractors or contextual events are not used because they make inference more complex and error-prone due to detection or tracking errors. We rather classify the general scene context and conditions in order to select the most appropriate visual cue or tracker for a given situation. To this end, we compute global image descriptors based on colour, intensity and motion at each video frame. In the past, other global image descriptors (sometimes called gist features) have been proposed (e.g. [298, 341, 367]) mostly for fixed images to classify scenes into different semantic categories, such as open, closed environments, indoor, outdoor etc.

### 6.4.3 Visual scene context description

One of our main goals is to globally characterise the scene at a given point in time through descriptors extracted from the image. For instance, we want to capture if the overall environment is rather dark or light, if it is cluttered, if the motion in the background is homogeneous etc. We also need to correlate these descriptors with the features used in the individual trackers from our pool of trackers $T_n, (n \in 1..N)$. We thus designed descriptors, called “scene features”, based on first and second order statistics of the main image characteristics (e.g. intensity, hue, motion vectors). We defined these low-level features such that they can be easily interpreted, and, at the same time, help the process of learning and correlating a scene condition to a tracker.

Using Equations 6.12-6.15, we define our scene features $f^\Omega_k$ over an image region $\Omega$ as:

**Intensity and texture features:**
- Average brightness ($f^\Omega_1$): the mean grey-scale pixel value (see Eq. 6.12).
- Average contrast ($f^\Omega_2$): the mean squared value of the difference of each grey-scale pixel and the average brightness (see Eq. 6.15).

**Chromatic features:**
- Average saturation ($f^\Omega_3$): the mean pixel value of the saturation channel in HSV colour space (Eq. 6.12).
- Saturation variance ($f^\Omega_4$): the variance of saturation (Eq. 6.13).
- Dominant hue ($f^\Omega_5$): the dominant colour extracted from a histogram of quantised hue pixel values in HSV colour space (Eq. 6.14).
- Hue variance ($f^\Omega_6$): the variance of the pixel values in the hue channel (Eq. 6.13).

**Motion features:**
- Average motion ($f^\Omega_7$): the mean of the norm of optical flow vectors (Eq. 6.12).
- Motion variance ($f^\Omega_8$): the variance of the norm of dense optical flow vectors (Eq. 6.13).

Let $p_i$ denote the pixel value of a given image channel (e.g. H,S,V) and $||\Omega||$ the number of pixels in the region $\Omega$. The above mentioned features are then defined as follows:
6.4. Dynamic adaptation to scene context

6.4.4 A scene context-based tracking approach

6.4.4.1 Supervised learning of scene context

The scene context classifier’s goal is to learn the different patterns that show high correlation between the information extracted from the scene context (described by our scene features) and the performance of a tracker in the particular set of conditions. As multi-class classifier, we chose a fully connected Multi-Layer Perceptron (MLP) with one hidden layer, $N$ output neurons and sigmoid activation functions. Any other algorithm could be used as well. In fact, a multi-class SVM showed equivalent performance in our experiments.

As shown in Fig.6.8, the classifier’s input $l_t$ at a frame $t$ consists of several components: The scene features $f_t$ extracted from the scene characterise the scene, the confidence values $p_i$ of the tracker. Finally, we obtain $M = 21$ scene context features $f_t = \{ f_t^G, f_t^L, f_t^D \}$ for frame $t$. 

Figure 6.7: The different image regions used to compute scene features.

Each of these features $k$ is computed on three different image regions $\Omega$ as shown in Fig.6.7. We define a **global value** as the feature computed on the whole image: $f_k^G$. The **local value** is the feature computed on the Region Of Interest (ROI): $f_k^L$. And a **differential value** as the difference between the feature computed on the foreground region (i.e. the ROI) and the background region (i.e. the image not including the ROI): $f_k^D$.

Not every combination of feature and region is used as some of them have little semantic meaning. The concatenation of these features gives us:

$$f_t^G = \{ f_1^G, \ldots, f_3^G, f_6^G, \ldots, f_8^G \},$$

$$f_t^L = \{ f_1^L, \ldots, f_8^L \},$$

$$f_t^D = \{ f_1^D, \ldots, f_7^D \}.$$
Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects

$N$ trackers $c_t = (c_t,..,c_t,N)$ providing the classifier with a measure of reliability of each tracker’s result, and finally, the identifier $s_{t-1}$ of the tracker that has been selected in the previous frame. We experimentally showed that this recursion highly contributes to learning the correlation between the scene context features and the selected tracker in a given frame.

Furthermore, in order to give the classifier information on the evolution of the scene context over time, we additionally provided it with the features from the two previous frames $t - 1$ and $t - 2$. We hence form a sliding window with the following vectors:

$$F_t = \{f_t, f_{t-1}, f_{t-2}\}$$
$$C_t = \{c_t, c_{t-1}, c_{t-2}\}$$
$$S_{t-1} = \{s_{t-1}, s_{t-2}, s_{t-3}\}$$

And the final feature vector given as input to the classifier is the following:

$$i_t = \{F_t, C_t, S_{t-1}\}.$$  

The classifier is trained off-line on a dataset with annotated object bounding boxes. Let us consider a training sample $\{i_j, o_j^*\}, (j \in 1..N_{train})$ where $N_{train}$ is number of training samples, $i_j$ is the input vector and $o_j^*$ is the label for the sample $j$, described below. In order to construct the classifier input vector $i_j = \{F_j, C_j, S_{j-1}\}$, we run the $N$ trackers on each video, and at each frame (i.e. training sample $j$), we extract the scene context features $F_j$ as well as the trackers’ confidences $C_j$ and save the identifier of best tracker to be used as the “previously selected tracker” $S_{j-1}$ in the following frame.

The best tracker for each sample $j$, i.e. the label $o_j^*$, is determined by computing the F-scores of each tracker between its output bounding box and the ground truth.

The tracker with the highest F-score is considered the label $o_j^*$ of the sample. We optimise the neural network parameters with standard stochastic gradient descent by minimising the mean squared error between the network’s response vector $y_j = (y_{j,1}..y_{j,N})$ and the desired output vector $y_j^*$. We studied different ways of defining the desired classifier output $y_j^*$:

- **One-of-N** : $y_j^* \in \{-1, +1\}^N$ It is the usual output strategy in classification where $+1$ is assigned to the class label $o_j^*$ and $-1$ otherwise.

- **Threshold** : $y_j^* \in \{-1, 0, +1\}^N$ We threshold the F-score of each class and assign $+1$ if the F-score is higher than the threshold, $0$ if it is lower, and $-1$ if the F-score is null (i.e. the tracker is completely lost). Here, the threshold value was set to 0.6, determined empirically.

Figure 6.8: The overall framework of the proposed Scene Context-Based Tracker (SCBT)
6.4. Dynamic adaptation to scene context

- **Ranking**: $y^*_t \in \{-1, -0.3, +0.3, +1\}^N$ We rank the F-scores of our classes, and assign respectively $+1$, $+0.3$ and $-0.3$ from highest to lowest F-score. If the F-score value is 0, than $-1$ is assigned to the corresponding class.

- **Regression**: $y^*_t = \{F_{score_1}, ..., F_{score_N}\}$ We directly use the F-score values, so the classifier trains to predict these values.

The network’s final class prediction, i.e. the predicted best tracker index, is simply $o_j = \arg\max_{n \in N} y^*_{j,n}$.

6.4.4.2 On-line tracker selection and learning

The proposed algorithm uses $N$ independent on-line trackers that are initialised with the bounding box of the object in the first video frame. Then, as illustrated in Fig. 6.8, the trackers and the context feature extraction operate in parallel providing at each frame $N$ confidence values $C_t$ and $M$ scene context features $F_t$ respectively. At each video frame $t$, the scene context classifier estimates a score for each tracker $y_t$ to perform best under the current scene context. We select the tracker with the highest score as the most suitable tracker $s_t = \arg\max_{n \in N} y_{t,n}$. The bounding box $B^*_t$ from the selected tracker $T^*_t$ is then passed to a Kalman Filter to deal with imprecise estimations and to provide a smoother object trajectory. Finally, the last step is the general update of the trackers with the filtered bounding box. The individual trackers train their models on-line. They use the ground truth bounding box of the first frame to initialise their models and update them every frame once a prediction is made using the selected bounding box $B^*_t$ processed by the Kalman filter.

6.4.5 Experiments

To evaluate our proposed approach we used a set of three trackers based on the Kernelized Correlation Filter (KCF) [182] and with three different types of complementary features: Histogram of Oriented Gradients (HOG), raw grey-scale intensities and quantised colours in the CIE-lab colour space. Note that our proposed method is completely independent of the underlying individual tracking algorithms.

We evaluated first the performance of the proposed scene context classifier based on the scene context features. To train the classifier we used the Princeton Tracking Benchmark Dataset [348], containing 100 videos, and a section of the ILSVRC2015 Dataset [325]. With a total of 397 videos (106 203 training samples and 12 700 validation samples), the dataset represents a diverse set of object types, background and scene conditions. For testing, we used the dataset of the VOT2013 benchmark [217]. The input features have been computed with the tracking output of the three KCF trackers. Table 6.6 shows the classification results for the different strategies for the output value $y^*_t$. One can see that the classifier is able to predict the best tracker in around 80% of the video frames. The One-of-N training strategy gives the best result and Ranking the second best. The table shows also the overall tracking results of the proposed framework. Here, the Ranking strategy gives considerably better results.

Table 6.7 shows more detailed tracking results on VOT2013. The proposed tracker selection framework improves both accuracy and failure rate (robustness) compared to the individual trackers. Also the Kalman Filter and the general update, i.e. updating the individual models only using the bounding box of the selected tracker, increase the overall performance. More results as well as a comparison with the state-of-the-art can be found in [28].
Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classifier output $\mathbf{y}_t^*$</th>
<th>Train rate</th>
<th>Test rate</th>
<th>Accuracy</th>
<th>Failures</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>One-of-N</td>
<td>89.56 %</td>
<td>79.56 %</td>
<td>0.583</td>
<td>1.313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Threshold</td>
<td>63.77 %</td>
<td>51.76 %</td>
<td>0.600</td>
<td>1.440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ranking</td>
<td>88.95 %</td>
<td>77.82 %</td>
<td><strong>0.607</strong></td>
<td><strong>0.563</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Regression</td>
<td>69.80 %</td>
<td>62.24 %</td>
<td>0.590</td>
<td>1.130</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 6.6: Correct classification rates on training (Princeton + ILSVRC15) and test (VOT2013) datasets for context classifiers trained using different desired output $\mathbf{y}_t^*$ strategies and the corresponding VOT2013 benchmark tracking results.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Accuracy</th>
<th>Failures</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>KCF RAW</td>
<td>0.522</td>
<td>1.688</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KCF HOG</td>
<td>0.590</td>
<td>0.875</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KCF LAB</td>
<td>0.568</td>
<td>0.938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Context classifier</td>
<td><strong>0.607</strong></td>
<td>0.563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Context classifier + general Update</td>
<td>0.606</td>
<td>0.438</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Context classifier + general Update + Kalman Filter</td>
<td>0.599</td>
<td><strong>0.375</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 6.7: VOT2013 benchmark[217] accuracy and failure rates for the individual KCF trackers and the proposed selection framework.
6.4.6 Conclusion

We proposed a novel selection framework that exploits scene context information in order to learn and predict the most suitable tracker. Using standard KCF trackers, we optimised the training of the scene context classifier by exploring multiple output strategies to select the most adapted one to our framework. We further evaluated the proposed framework on a standard benchmark proving the efficiency of the scene features and scene context classifier as well as the overall tracking framework. However, the tracking performance of our method is bounded by the performance of the individual trackers that are used. The proposed selection framework could be further improved by using more powerful individual tracker at the expense of computational efficiency and speed of the framework. Finally, adding new ‘semantic’ scene features that would characterise the type of object or type of scene would be an interesting future research direction.

6.5 Conclusion

This concludes the first part of this manuscript. We proposed several major contributions in the field of computer vision and machine learning applied to different problems of tracking a single and multiple objects in dynamic unconstrained environments. Our work was mainly focused on improving long-term MOT, especially multiple face tracking, by learning models for track initialisation and removal coping with the typical limitations of object detection algorithms (i.e. false and missing detection). Another focus was the design of robust and fast on-line learning and tracking algorithms coping with the challenging situations in unconstrained environments without any prior knowledge. And finally, we studied several approaches for effectively integrating visual scene context in the tracking process. Note that, we developed several complete tracking frameworks that were highly ranked in the very competitive international challenges VOT2014 and VOT2015, a challenge that is organised every year since 2013 as part of a workshop in conjunction with ECCV and ICCV.
Chapter 6. On-line learning of appearance models for tracking arbitrary objects
PART II

Similarity metric learning and neural networks
7 Siamese Neural Networks for face and gesture recognition

7.1 Introduction

As shown by our research presented in the last part, and by many works in the literature in the last decades, discriminative approaches in machine learning are a very powerful tool in numerous Computer Vision problems, including visual object tracking. In this part, we will consider other applications that do not allow or are not suited for such supervised learning approaches. This is the case, for example, when:

- instance labels (e.g. positive/negative, foreground/background or a person identifier) are not available or too difficult to obtain for training or

- the number of classes is not fixed a priori or

- we want to model explicitly the relationship or similarity between instances and categories of instances.

If no information on instance classes or their relationships is given at all, unsupervised approaches, such as clustering methods, are most suitable to automatically learn and infer a general model of the data. However, in many settings, we have class labels for at least some of the training data, and we would like to learn a generic model that is applicable for all data of the same type. In this case, weakly supervised or semi-supervised learning algorithms are commonly employed.

One such weakly supervised approach is to automatically learn a similarity metric between instances of a given category (e.g. faces). That is, the instance labels are not explicitly learnt but rather used to model the distance\(^7\) between similar and dissimilar instances – for example, by using pairs of instances.

In the work that I will present in this chapter, we followed this approach using Siamese Neural Networks (SNN). The original term “siamese” relates to the use of pairs of instances as introduced by Bromley et al. [99]. However, in the literature, this has been extended to triplet or tuple-based architectures, as in our approaches. As we will outline in the next section, there are other models, for example, based on statistical projections or Support Vector Machines. However, feed-forward neural networks have several properties that make them interesting and particularly suitable for the problems that we studied:

- They can model a wide variety of linear and non-linear functions, c.f. the universal approximation theorem [193], and well-established optimisation approaches can be used.

\(^7\)sometimes the term distance learning is used but many existing models do not strictly fulfil the mathematical requirements of a distance, e.g. triangle inequality
• By carefully specifying the architectures, we can relatively easily "control" the complexity of the models (in terms of the number of parameters and at different abstraction levels, considering it as a data processing pipeline).

• Through multi-layered architectures and the error back-propagation algorithm, we can automatically construct models that simultaneously learn optimal features and projections into vector sub-spaces that best represent semantic similarities.

• Using multi-layer Convolutional Neural Network architectures, we can define models that are suitable and very powerful for (natural) image data.

• Finally, for a large variety of applications and data, neural networks showed a high generalisation capacity and robustness to different types of noise.

In the following, I will first outline the different algorithms and models that exist for similarity metric learning in the literature and describe the principal SNN approach. Then, I will present two major contributions that have been made to this field in the context of the PhD theses of Lilei Zheng [441] and Samuel Berlemont [90] that I have co-supervised. One is related to the definition of novel objective functions and learning strategies to improve the convergence for training and the performance at test time with applications to pairwise face verification. The other proposes a new SNN training framework with instance tuples to better condition the resulting similarity space applied to the problem of 3D gesture recognition using inertial data (from mobile phones).

7.2 Metric learning with Siamese Neural Networks

Most linear metric learning methods employ two types of metrics: the Mahalanobis distance or a more general similarity metric. In both cases, a linear transformation matrix $W$ is learnt to project input features into a target space. Typically, distance metric learning relates to a Mahalanobis-like distance function [397, 410]: $d_W(x, y) = \sqrt{(x - y)^T W (x - y)}$, where $x$ and $y$ are two sample vectors, and $W$ is not the covariance matrix as for the Mahalanobis distance but is to be learnt by the algorithm. Note that when $W$ is the identity matrix, $d_W(x, y)$ is the Euclidean distance. In contrast, similarity metric learning methods learn a function of the following form: $s_W(x, y) = x^T W y / N(x, y)$, where $N(x, y)$ is a normalisation term [315]. Specifically, when $N(x, y) = 1$, $s_W(x, y)$ is the bilinear similarity function [108]; when $N(x, y) = \sqrt{x^T W x} \sqrt{y^T W y}$, $s_W(x, y)$ is the generalised cosine similarity function [186].

Non-linear metric learning methods are constructed by simply substituting the above linear projection with a non-linear transformation [121, 194, 210, 426]. For example, Hu et al. [194] and Chopra et al. [121] employed neural networks to accomplish this. These non-linear methods are subject to local optima and more inclined to overfit the training data but have the potential to outperform linear methods on some problems [85, 210]. Compared with linear models, non-linear models are usually preferred on a redundant training set to well capture the underlying distribution of the data [229]. A detailed survey and review of metric learning approaches has been published recently by Bellet et al. [85], and an experimental analysis and comparison by Moutafis et al. [284]. We will concentrate here on Siamese Neural Networks (SNN) that can represent linear or non-linear projections depending on the used activation function and number of layers.

A SNN essentially differentiates itself from classical feed-forward neural networks by its specific training strategy involving sets of samples labelled as similar or dissimilar. The capabilities
7.2. Metric learning with Siamese Neural Networks

Figure 7.1: Original SNN training architecture.

of different SNN-based methods depend on four main points: the network architecture, the training set selection strategy, the objective function, and the training algorithm [99]. In the following, we will explain the three first points in more detail as they are most related to our contributions.

7.2.1 Architecture

A SNN can be seen as two identical, parallel neural networks \( NN \) sharing the same set of weights \( W \) (see Fig. 7.1). These sub-networks each receive an input sample \( X \), and produce output feature vectors \( O_X \) that are supposed to be close for samples from the same class and far apart for samples from different classes, according to some distance measure, such as the cosine similarity metric (c.f. section 7.2.3). During the training step, an objective function \( E_W \), defined using the chosen distance measure over the output of all input sample combinations, is iteratively minimised.

Bromley et al. [99] introduced the Siamese architecture in 1994, using a Siamese CNN with two sub-networks for a signature verification system handling time-series of hand-crafted low-level features. In 2005, Chopra, Hadsell and LeCun [121] formalised the Siamese architecture applying a CNN on raw images for face verification, before adapting it to a dimensionality reduction technique [173]. More recently, Siamese CNNs have been used successfully for various tasks, such as person re-identification [419], speaker verification [112], and face identification [359].

CNN-based architectures are more specific to image inputs, and several research works propose to use feed-forward Multi-Layer Perceptrons (MLP) to handle more general vector inputs. For example, Yih et al. [421] apply SNNs to learn similarities on text data, Bordes et al. [97] on entities in Knowledge Bases, and Masci et al. [273] on multi-modal data. In this chapter, we will mostly focus on our work on MLP-based architectures and applications to face verification and gesture recognition. Whereas, in the following chapter, we will present our research on deeper CNN-based architectures applied to person re-identification in images.

7.2.2 Training Set Selection

The selection strategy for training examples depends mostly on the application and the kind of knowledge about similarities that one wants to incorporate in the model. For many applications, such as face or signature verification, the similarity between samples depend on their “real-world” origin, i.e. faces/signatures from the same person, and the neural network allows to determine the genuineness of a test sample w.r.t. a reference by means of a binary classification. Most
approaches use pairs of training samples \((X_1, X_2)\) and a binary similarity relation which takes different values for similar and dissimilar pairs. Lefebvre et al. [231] proposed to expand the information about the expected neighbourhood, and suggested a more symmetric representation: by considering a reference sample \(X_R\) for each known relation, it is possible to define triplets \((X_R, X_+, X_-)\), with \(X_+\) forming a genuine pair with the reference \(X_R\), while \(X_-\) is a sample from another class – sometimes also called the anchor, the positive and the negative examples, respectively.

### 7.2.3 Objective Functions

The objective function computes a similarity metric between the higher-level features extracted from multiple input patterns. Minimising this function iteratively during training ensures that the distance between similar patterns gets smaller, and the one between dissimilar gets larger.

**Cosine pair-wise**

Given a network with weights \(W\) and two samples \(X_1\) and \(X_2\) with their labels \(Y\), a target \(t(Y)\) is defined for the cosine value between the two respective output vectors \(O_{X_1}\) and \(O_{X_2}\) as “1” for similar pairs and “−1” (or “0”) for dissimilar pairs [99]:

\[
E_W(X_1, X_2, Y) = (t(Y) - \cos(O_{X_1}, O_{X_2}))^2.
\]

A similar function is used in the Cosine Similarity Metric Learning (CSML) approach [186]:

\[
E_W(X_1, X_2, Y) = -t(Y) \cos(O_{X_1}, O_{X_2}).
\]

**Norm-based**

Several works [121, 173, 273, 359] propose to use the norm, e.g. \(\ell_2\)-norm, between the output vectors as a similarity measure:

\[
d_W(X_1, X_2) = \|O_{X_1} - O_{X_2}\|_2.
\]

For example, Chopra et al. [121] define an objective composed of an “impostor” \(I\) \((t(Y)=1)\) and a “genuine” \(G\) term \((t(Y)=0)\):

\[
E_W(X_1, X_2, Y) = (1 - t(Y))E^I_W(X_1, X_2) + t(Y)E^G_W(X_1, X_2)
\]

with

\[
E^I_W(X_1, X_2) = \frac{2}{Q}(d_W)^2, E^G_W(X_1, X_2) = 2Qe^{-\frac{m^2}{Q^2}d_W},
\]

where \(Q\) is the upper bound of \(d_W\).

Many recent works use the so-called contrastive loss [173], where

\[
E^I_W(X_1, X_2) = d_W^2 \quad \text{and} \quad E^G_W(X_1, X_2) = \max(m - d_W^2, 0),
\]

with \(m\) being a fixed margin parameter.

**Triplet**

Weinberger et al. [397] introduced the triplet loss using simultaneously targets for genuine and impostor pairs by forming triplets of a reference \(X_R\), a positive \(X_+\) and a negative \(X_-\) sample:

\[
E_W(X_R, X_+, X_-) = \max(d_W(O_R, O_+)^2 - d_W(O_R, O_-)^2 + m, 0).
\]
Later, Lefebvre et al. [231] proposed a triplet similarity measure based on the cosine distance. Here, the output of the positive pair \((O_R, O_+)\) is trained to be collinear, whereas the output of the negative pair \((O_R, O_-)\) is trained to be orthogonal. Thus:

\[
E_W(X_R, X_+, X_-) = (1 - \cos(O_R, O_+))^2 + (0 - \cos(O_R, O_-))^2 \tag{7.8}
\]

Deviance

Yi et al. [419] use the binomial deviance to define their objective function:

\[
E_W(X_1, X_2, Y) = \ln\left(\exp^{-2t(Y) \cos(O_{X_1}, O_{X_2}) + 1}\right) \tag{7.9}
\]

Two Pairs

Yih et al. [421] consider two pairs of vectors, \((X_{p1}, X_{q1})\) and \((X_{p2}, X_{q2})\), the first being known to have a higher similarity than the second. The main objective is then to maximise

\[
\Delta = \cos(O_{X_{p1}}, O_{X_{q1}}) - \cos(O_{X_{p2}}, O_{X_{q2}}) \tag{7.10}
\]

in a logistic loss function

\[
E_W(\Delta) = \log(1 + \exp(-\gamma \Delta)) \tag{7.11}
\]

with \(\gamma\) being a scaling factor.

Probability-driven

Nair et al. [288] add a final unit to their neural network architecture whose activation function computes the probability \(P\) of two samples \(X_1, X_2\) being from the same class:

\[
P = \frac{1}{1 + \exp(-(w \cdot \cos(O_{X_1}, O_{X_2}) + b))}, \tag{7.12}
\]

with \(w\) and \(b\) being scalar parameters.

Statistical

Chen et al. [112] compute the first and second-order statistics, \(\mu^{(i)}\) and \(\Sigma^{(i)}\), over sliding windows on the SNN outputs of a speech sample \(i\), and define the objective function as:

\[
E_W(X_1, X_2, Y) = (1 - t(Y))(D_m + D_S) + t(Y) \cdot (\exp(-\frac{D_m}{\lambda_m}) + \exp(-\frac{D_S}{\lambda_S})) \tag{7.13}
\]

where

\[
D_m = \left\|\mu^{(i)} - \mu^{(j)}\right\|^2_2, \quad D_S = \left\|\Sigma^{(i)} - \Sigma^{(j)}\right\|^2_F \tag{7.14}
\]

are incompatibility measures of these statistics between two samples \(i\) and \(j\), \(\lambda_m\) and \(\lambda_S\) are tolerance bounds on these measures, and \(\|\cdot\|_F\) is the Frobenius norm.

We have made several contributions proposing novel training strategies and objective functions to more effectively train SNNs for different applications related to pairwise face verification and gesture classification. For example, the Triangular Similarity Metric and the Polar-Sine Metric, described in the following sections.
Chapter 7. Siamese Neural Networks for face and gesture recognition

7.3 Triangular Similarity Metric Learning for pairwise verification

7.3.1 Introduction

In this section, I will describe our work [4, 8, 25–27] that has been performed in the context of the PhD thesis of Lilei Zheng [441], co-supervised with Christophe Garcia, Khalid Idrissi and Atilla Baskurt. This research focused on novel approaches for similarity metric learning with SNN applied to the problem of face verification.

Compared with the traditional identification task in which a decision of acceptance or rejection is made by comparing a sample to models (or templates) of each class [274, 320], pairwise verification is more challenging because of the difficulty of building robust models with enough training data for each class [196]. Often, only one training sample per class is available. Moreover, in current benchmark datasets, usually, the class identities in the training and test sets are mutually exclusive, i.e. there are no examples in the training set from a class figuring in the test set. The problem of pairwise face verification is to analyse two face images and decide whether they represent the same person or not. As mentioned above, it is usually assumed that neither of the face images shows a person from the training set.

In our work, we focused on Similarity Metric Learning approaches based on SNNs, which are particularly suitable for this type of problem. The models that we have studied are different linear and non-linear MLP architectures, trained with pairs of examples. Our main contributions have been: a new objective function for effective similarity metric learning with SNNs and a new training approach that only uses similar pairs of examples.

7.3.2 State of the art

One of the most used benchmark for face verification in the literature is “Labeled Faces in the Wild” (LFW) [196] that includes faces with varying poses and lighting conditions as well as facial expressions (see Fig. 7.3). It defines two evaluation protocols, one called “restricted” where only provided data can be used, and one called “unrestricted” where additional external data may be used for training.

In particular, for this last setting, recent deep learning techniques have approached the accuracy of 100% under the LFW evaluation standard. Almost all the published methods employed deep Convolutional Neural Networks (CNN) to process face images and to learn a robust face representation on additional large labelled training datasets, such as DeepFace from Facebook using the non-public SFC dataset [365]; DeepID [359, 360] using the CelebFaces dataset [258] and the WDRef dataset [111]; FaceNet from Google using a 260-million image dataset [332] and the Tencent-BestImage commercial system using their BestImage Celebrities Face dataset.

However, with limited training data, these deep methods are more prone to overfitting and thus usually result in inferior performance for unseen test data. Under the restriction of no outside labelled training data, tremendous efforts have been put on developing robust face descriptors [62, 81, 111, 130, 197, 209, 243, 301, 328, 335, 342, 370, 402] and metric learning methods [81, 106, 131, 172, 186, 194, 398, 424]. Popular face descriptors include eigenfaces [370], Gabor wavelets [130], SIFT [209, 260], Local Binary Patterns (LBP) [62], etc. Especially, LBP and its variants, such as center-symmetric LBP (CSLBP) [180], multi-block LBP (MBLBP) [432],

9 http://mmlab.ie.cuhk.edu.hk/projects/CelebA.html
10 http://bestimage.qq.com/
7.3. Triangular Similarity Metric Learning for pairwise verification

\[ c_i = a_i + s_i b_i = a_i + b_i \]

(a) \[ s_i = 1 \]

\[ c_i = a_i + s_i b_i = a_i - b_i \]

(b) \[ s_i = -1 \]

Figure 7.2: Geometrical interpretation of the TSML cost and gradient. (a) Minimising the cost means to make similar vectors parallel and make dissimilar vectors opposite. (b) The gradient function suggests unit vectors on the diagonals as targets for \( a_i \) and \( b_i \): the same target vector for a similar pair (\( s_i = 1 \)); or the opposite target vectors for a dissimilar pair (\( s_i = -1 \)).

three patch LBP (TPLBP) [402] and over-complete LBP (OCLBP) [81], have proven to be effective for describing facial texture in images. Since face verification needs an appropriate way to measure the difference or similarity between two images, many researchers have been studying metric learning which aims at automatically specifying a metric from data pairs. For instance, Guillaumin et al. [171] proposed Logistic Discriminative Metric Learning (LDML) to model the probability of two vectors being similar by using a parametric sigmoid function with learnt parameters. Cao et al. [106] proposed to simultaneously learn a Mahalanobis distance-like metric and a bilinear similarity metric. They call their method Similarity Metric Learning over the Intra-personal Subspace (Sub-SML). The method introduced by Nguyen et al. [186] is called Cosine Similarity Metric Learning (CSML) and iteratively optimises a cosine-based objective function using similar and dissimilar pairs (c.f. Eq. 7.2). Finally, Chopra et al. [121] were the first to apply a SNN model to face verification.

Besides, other efforts have been made on face frontalisation (i.e. pose alignment) [89, 241, 418] or multiple descriptor fusion [66, 125, 301], in order to further improve the face verification performance.

### 7.3.3 Learning a more effective similarity metric

In the context of Lilei Zheng’s PhD [441], we proposed a new approach for pairwise similarity learning called Triangular Similarity Metric Learning (TSML). We used a SNN with shared weights \( W \) that, at an iteration \( i \), takes two inputs \( \mathbf{X}_1 \) and \( \mathbf{X}_2 \) and produces two outputs \( a_i \) and \( b_i \) (\( \mathbf{O}_{\mathbf{X}_1} \) and \( \mathbf{O}_{\mathbf{X}_2} \) in the previous section). The cost function of TSML is defined as:

\[ E_W = \frac{1}{2} \| a_i \|^2 + \frac{1}{2} \| b_i \|^2 - \| c_i \| + 1, \tag{7.15} \]

where \( c_i = a_i + s_i b_i \): \( c_i \) can be regarded as one of the two diagonals of the parallelogram formed by \( a_i \) and \( b_i \) (see Fig. 7.2(a)). Moreover, this cost function can be rewritten as:

\[ E_W = \frac{1}{2} (\| a_i \| - 1)^2 + \frac{1}{2} (\| b_i \| - 1)^2 + \| a_i \| + \| b_i \| - \| c_i \| \] \tag{7.16} \]

We can see that minimising the first part aims at making the vectors \( a_i \) and \( b_i \) having unit length; the second part concerns the well-known triangle inequality theorem: the sum of the
lengths of two sides of a triangle must always be greater than the length of the third side, i.e. $\|a_i\| + \|b_i\| - \|c_i\| > 0$. More interestingly, with the length constraints induced by the first part, minimising the second part is equivalent to minimising the angle $\theta$ between the vectors of a similar pair ($s_i = 1$) or maximising the angle $\theta$ between a dissimilar pair ($s_i = -1$), in other words, minimising the Cosine Similarity between $a_i$ and $s_i b_i$ (c.f. Eq. 7.2).

In practice, this cost function can be minimised iteratively using Stochastic Gradient Descent (SGD) and the well-known gradient Backpropagation algorithm for multi-layer neural architectures. The gradient of the cost function (Eq. (7.15)) with respect to the parameters $W$ is:

$$\frac{\partial E_W}{\partial W} = (a_i - \frac{c_i}{\|c_i\|})^T \frac{\partial a_i}{\partial W} + (b_i - \frac{s_i c_i}{\|c_i\|})^T \frac{\partial b_i}{\partial W}.$$ (7.17)

We can obtain the optimal cost at the zero gradient: $a_i - \frac{c_i}{\|c_i\|} = 0$ and $b_i - \frac{s_i c_i}{\|c_i\|} = 0$. That is, the gradient function has $\frac{c_i}{\|c_i\|}$ and $\frac{s_i c_i}{\|c_i\|}$ as targets for $a_i$ and $b_i$, respectively. Figure 7.2(b) illustrates this: for a similar pair, $a_i$ and $b_i$ are mapped to the same target vector along the diagonal (the red solid line); for a dissimilar pair, $a_i$ and $b_i$ are mapped to opposite unit vectors along the other diagonal (the blue solid line). This perfectly reveals the objective of attracting similar pairs and separating dissimilar pairs. See [4] for more details on the optimisation procedure.

7.3.4 Experiments

7.3.4.1 Pairwise face verification results

As mentioned above, we used the LFW benchmark (‘funnelled’ version, i.e. aligned and cropped face images) to evaluate our proposed TSML approach. Both settings, the restricted and unrestricted protocol are evaluated. The restricted dataset contains fixed 300 positive and 300 negative pairs, whereas in the unrestricted case we generate more pairs from the same images using their identity labels. For the SNN, we considered three types of neural network architectures, “Linear” corresponding to a single-layer network without bias term, “Non-linear” with an additional tanh activation function and bias and “MLP” corresponding to a two-layer network (i.e. one hidden layer) with bias and tanh activation functions. We further experimented with a training strategy that uses only similar pairs in the optimisation, and no dissimilar pairs at all.

The intuition behind this is that learning dissimilarity is challenging and not well conditioned as opposed to similarities. Thus, depending on the data, the negative term in the objective function related to dissimilarity may be partly contradictory to the positive one and might inhibit the learning of similarities during the training process. As training input, we used standard...
7.3. Triangular Similarity Metric Learning for pairwise verification

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Approaches</th>
<th>Restricted Training</th>
<th>Unrestricted Training</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Baseline</td>
<td>84.83±0.38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WCCN</td>
<td>91.10±0.45</td>
<td>91.17±0.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Linear</td>
<td>87.95±0.40</td>
<td>92.03±0.38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Nonlinear</td>
<td>86.23±0.39</td>
<td>91.43±0.52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-MLP</td>
<td>84.10±0.45</td>
<td>89.30±0.73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Linear-Sim</td>
<td>91.90±0.52</td>
<td>92.40±0.48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Nonlinear-Sim</td>
<td>90.58±0.52</td>
<td>91.47±0.37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-MLP-Sim</td>
<td>88.98±0.64</td>
<td>89.03±0.58</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.1: Mean maxDA scores (±standard error of the mean) of pairwise face verification by the TSML-based methods on the LFW-funneled image dataset. ’-Sim’ means training with similar pairs only.

state-of-the-art Fisher Vector (FV) features [307, 342] to describe the face images and reduce them to 500 dimensions using Whitened Principal Component Analysis (WPCA).

Like the minimal Decision Cost Function (minDCF) in [170], we defined a Decision Accuracy (DA) function to measure the overall verification performance on a set of data pairs:

\[
DA(\gamma) = \frac{\text{number of right decisions}(\gamma)}{\text{total number of pairs}},
\]

where the threshold \(\gamma\) is used to make a decision on the final distance or similarity values: for the TSML system, \(\cos(a, b) > \gamma\) means \((a, b)\) is a similar pair, otherwise it is dissimilar. The maximal DA (maxDA) over all possible threshold values is the final score recorded. We report the mean maxDA scores (±standard error of the mean) of the 10 experiments.

Table 7.1 shows the results for a baseline method, i.e. the maxDA scores directly computed on the FV data, the state-of-the-art method “Within Class Covariance Normalization” (WCCN) [81], and different variants of the proposed TSML approach. It can be noted that the unrestricted training gives better results, in general, as more training pairs are available. Surprisingly, linear models perform better than non-linear ones. This has been confirmed by several other experiments and is probably due to overfitting and the lack of training data. And finally, the methods that train the models on only similar pairs give superior results, and also outperform the other baseline approaches. Note that also WCCN does not model “dissimilarity” as it minimises only the intra-class variance and not the inter-class variance.

We further compared our approach to the state of the art. For a fair comparison, all tested methods use a single type of feature as input data. Better results could be obtained with a fusion of several types of features but, here, we wanted to focus on the different algorithms for similarity metric learning. Table 7.2 summarises the results on the LFW face verification benchmark (restricted setting). The proposed TSML approach outperforms all existing methods. Note that DDML (Discriminative Distance Metric Learning) is another method that we developed in the context of Lilei Zheng’s thesis [4]. It uses a norm-based objective function and also gives excellent results, only slightly inferior to TSML.
### Chapter 7. Siamese Neural Networks for face and gesture recognition

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Feature</th>
<th>Accuracy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MRF-MLBP [65]</td>
<td>multi-scale LBP</td>
<td>79.08±0.14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APEM [241]</td>
<td>SIFT</td>
<td>81.88±0.94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APEM [241]</td>
<td>LBP</td>
<td>81.97±1.90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eigen-PEP [243]</td>
<td>PEP</td>
<td>88.47±0.91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hierarchical-PEP [240]</td>
<td>PEP</td>
<td>90.40±1.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SVM [342]</td>
<td>Fisher Vector faces</td>
<td>87.47±1.49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DDML-Linear-Sim</td>
<td>Fisher Vector faces</td>
<td>91.03±0.61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WCCN [81]</td>
<td>Fisher Vector faces</td>
<td>91.10±0.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Linear-Sim</td>
<td>Fisher Vector faces</td>
<td>91.90±0.52</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.2: Comparison of TSML-Linear-Sim with other methods using a single type of face descriptor under the restricted configuration with no outside data on LFW-funnelled.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Approaches</th>
<th>Restricted Training</th>
<th>Unrestricted Training</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Baseline</td>
<td>87.78±0.39 / 0.1335</td>
<td>91.69±0.29 / 0.0900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WCCN</td>
<td>91.69±0.29 / 0.0900</td>
<td>91.97±0.33 / 0.0853</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Linear</td>
<td>89.78±0.25 / 0.1108</td>
<td>93.97±0.20 / 0.0648</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Nonlinear</td>
<td>87.43±0.31 / 0.1340</td>
<td>93.11±0.20 / 0.0733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-MLP</td>
<td>84.88±0.24 / 0.1592</td>
<td>90.21±0.36 / 0.1023</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Linear-Sim</td>
<td>92.94±0.15 / 0.0785</td>
<td>93.99±0.24 / 0.0662</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-Nonlinear-Sim</td>
<td>91.29±0.25 / 0.0918</td>
<td>93.43±0.23 / 0.0690</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSML-MLP-Sim</td>
<td>89.59±0.45 / 0.1093</td>
<td>90.83±0.30 / 0.0967</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.3: Mean maxDA scores (±standard error of the mean) and mean EER of pairwise speaker verification by the TSML methods on the NIST i-vector speaker dataset. ’-Sim’ means training with similar pairs only.

#### 7.3.4.2 Results on other applications

**Speaker verification**

We further evaluated our TSML approach on other pairwise verification problems – for instance, speaker verification using audio data. To this end, we used the data of the NIST 2014 Speaker i-Vector Challenge [170], which consist of i-vectors [132, 158, 232] derived from conversational telephone speech data in the NIST speaker recognition evaluations from 2004 to 2012. Each i-vector, the identity vector, is a vector of 600 components, designed to be characteristic for the voice of a given person. This dataset consists of a development set for building models and a test set for evaluation. Table 7.3 shows the average maxDA scores of the different variants of TSML with respect to the baseline and the state-of-the-art method WCCM. These results confirm the observations made for face verification, i.e. the linear models perform better, and training with only similar pairs improves the performance.

**Kinship verification**

Another similar problem is kinship verification from images, where the objective is to determine whether there is a kin relation between a pair of given face images. Lu et al. [261]
### 7.3. Triangular Similarity Metric Learning for pairwise verification

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Team</th>
<th>F-S</th>
<th>F-D</th>
<th>M-S</th>
<th>M-D</th>
<th>Mean</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Polito</td>
<td>84.00</td>
<td>82.20</td>
<td>84.80</td>
<td>81.20</td>
<td>83.10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIRIS</td>
<td>89.40</td>
<td>83.60</td>
<td>86.20</td>
<td>85.00</td>
<td>86.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ULPGC</td>
<td>85.40</td>
<td>75.80</td>
<td>75.60</td>
<td>81.60</td>
<td>80.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NUAA</td>
<td>84.40</td>
<td>81.60</td>
<td>82.80</td>
<td>81.60</td>
<td>82.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BIU</td>
<td>87.51</td>
<td>80.82</td>
<td>79.78</td>
<td>75.63</td>
<td>80.94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SILD (LBP)</td>
<td>78.20</td>
<td>70.00</td>
<td>71.20</td>
<td>67.80</td>
<td>71.80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SILD (HOG)</td>
<td>79.60</td>
<td>71.60</td>
<td>73.20</td>
<td>69.60</td>
<td>73.50</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.4: Kinship verification accuracy (%) on KinFaceW-II under the restricted configuration in the FG 2015 Kinship Verification Evaluation.

constructed the Kinship Face in the Wild (KinFaceW) dataset for studying the problem of kinship verification from unconstrained face images mostly collected from the Internet, defining four types of relationships: Father-Son (F-S), Father-Daughter (F-D), Mother-Son (MS) and Mother-Daughter (M-D). Similar to LFW, the KinFaceW dataset holds the setting of limited training data for some classes and the setting of mutually exclusive training and test sets. There are two sub-sets: KinFaceW-I and KinFaceW-II, and besides their size, the major difference is that any two relative faces were acquired from different photos in KinFaceW-I but most relative faces in KinFaceW-II were captured from the same photo. In other words, environment conditions such as lighting differ more significantly between face pairs in KinFaceW-I than those in KinFaceW-II.

Using FV feature vectors as input, we evaluated TSML on this dataset, and, more importantly, we participated in an international competition on kinship verification that was organised by Lu et al. [25] in conjunction with FG 2015 and that used the KinFaceW dataset to benchmark the submitted methods. Table 7.4 shows the verification accuracy of the different submitted methods for KinFaceW-II in the restricted setting (ours is called LIRIS here). Our approach achieved the first place in this part of the competition. In the first part, we achieved the third place with a mean accuracy of 82.74% behind the method from “Politecnico di Torino” (Italy) (86.30%) and the one from “Nanjing University of Aeronautics and Astronautics” (China) (82.96), both proposing a feature selection approach using different types of features and an SVM classifier. The Side-information based linear discriminant analysis (SILD) [208] has been used as a baseline.

### 7.3.5 Conclusion

The proposed TSML method represents a generic SNN-based similarity metric learning framework that can operate with different models – linear and non-linear and with varying complexity, making it a powerful approach for weakly supervised learning for various applications and giving state-of-the-art results on different pairwise verification problems.

An interesting result of our studies is the fact that training with only similar pairs may improve the overall verification performance. Our further research work, presented in the following section, tries to better incorporate the negative pairs in the training process to build a more powerful model that also exploits these dissimilarities. This will especially help in the context of classification, which is the objective of the following work.
Chapter 7. Siamese Neural Networks for face and gesture recognition

Figure 7.4: Left: Illustrations of some symbolic gestures that are to be recognised from inertial sensor data from mobile devices. Right: Examples from the Multimodal Human Action Dataset (MHAD).

7.4 Class-balanced Siamese Neural Networks for gesture and action recognition

7.4.1 Introduction

Our experiments showed that SNNs are able to model complex similarity metrics learnt from data. In the research work described in this section, that has been conducted as part of the PhD thesis of Samuel Berlemont [90] and that I have co-supervised with Christophe Garcia (LIRIS) and Grégoire Lefebvre (Orange Labs), we studied new approaches to incorporate negative, dissimilar examples in the training algorithm of SNNs, to improve the convergence and the resulting overall embedding in the similarity space. To this end, we proposed training algorithms that go beyond pairwise similarities and dissimilarities and operate on tuples. In addition, in this work, we were not concerned with verification but we concentrated on classification problems, i.e. we have data samples with labelled classes, and the classes are the same at training and test time. Thus, in principle, supervised learning approaches could be used in this context. However, there are advantages in modelling more explicitly the similarities and relationships between the different classes using a weakly supervised metric learning approach with SNNs. That is, not only the overall classification performance is improved, but also new samples from unknown classes can be more effectively rejected, as we will show in this section.

The developed algorithms have been evaluated on the problems of action recognition and on 3D symbolic gesture recognition using data from inertial sensors (accelerometers, gyroscopes etc.) commonly present in current mobile phones. Some of the gestures (e.g. flick east/west/north/south, pick, throw, heart, circle etc.) and activities (e.g. climbing, running, jumping etc.) are depicted in Fig. 7.4. The solution to this problem bears a certain number of challenges. On the one hand, inertial MicroElectroMechanicals Systems (MEMS) present inherent flaws that have to be taken into account, since they can be deceived by physical phenomena (e.g. electromagnetic interferences). On the other hand, in a real open-world application, inertial based gesture and action recognition also has to cope with high variations between users (i.e. right/left-handed users, dynamic/slow movements, etc.). Finally, to offer more functionality to final users, such a recognition system should propose a large vocabulary of possible interactions and reject all uncertain decisions and parasite or irrelevant motion.

In our work, we considered a gesture or action data example as a vector of fixed size, i.e. we worked with temporally segmented samples, and we performed a pre-processing step with a
certain number of traditional filtering, resampling and normalisation techniques to reduce the noise and to normalise the duration. More details on this can be found in [2, 33].

7.4.2 State of the art

Inertial gesture and action recognition

In the recent literature, three main strategies exist to deal with gesture and action recognition based on inertial data: probabilistic temporal signal modelling, temporal warping or statistical machine learning.

The probabilistic approach has mainly been studied with discrete [189, 207, 211] and continuous HMMs [314]. For instance, Kela et al. [211] used discrete HMMs (dHMM) from gesture velocity profiles. The first step is the input data space clustering in order to build a feature vector codebook. The second one consists in creating a discrete HMM using the sequences of vector codebook indexes. A correct recognition rate of 96.1% is obtained with 5 HMM states and a codebook size of 8 from 8 gestures realised by 37 users. In order to use gesture data correlation in time, Pylvänäinen [314] proposed a system based on a continuous HMM (cHMM) achieving a recognition rate of 96.76% on a dataset with 20 samples for 10 gestures realised by 7 persons.

The second approach is based on temporal warping from a set of reference gestures [64, 256, 401]. Liu et al. [256] presented a method using Dynamic Time Warping (DTW) from pre-processed signal data that gives gesture recognition and user identification rates of respectively 93.5% and 88%, outperforming in this study the HMM-based approach.

The third strategy is based on a specific classifier [188, 230, 404]. Hoffman et al. [188] propose a linear classifier and Adaboost, resulting in a recognition rate of 98% for 13 gestures performed by 17 participants. The study of Wu et al. [404] proposes to construct fixed-length feature vectors from the temporal input signal to be classified with Support Vector Machines (SVM). Each gesture is then segmented in time and statistical measures (mean, energy, entropy, standard deviation and correlation) are computed for each segment to form the final feature vectors. The resulting recognition rate is 95.21% for 12 gestures made by 10 individuals, outperforming in this study the DTW results. Finally, the recent study by Lefebvre et al. [230] proposes a method based on Bidirectional Long-Short-Term Memory Recurrent Neural Networks (BLSTM-RNN see [168]), which classifies sequences of raw MEM data with very good accuracy, outperforming classical HMM and DTW methods.

We also developed an inertial gesture classification method based on supervised learning and a specific Convolutional Neural Network (CNN) model. For our dataset of 14 symbolic gestures, we obtained a classification accuracy of up to 95.8% depending on the used test protocol outperforming other state-of-the-art methods. However, for the reasons mentioned above, i.e. better rejection of unknown classes and improved similarity metric space, we focused our following work on similarity metric learning approaches with SNN models.

Rejection approaches

The notion of rejection in classification has been studied in other areas and applications. Two kinds of rejection criteria have been proposed in the literature, with the first criterion based on the actual input to the classifier, and the second based on decision boundaries for the output space. Following the first strategy, Vasconcelos et al. [376], tackling handwritten digit recognition with a neural network-based classifier, suggested to use “guard units” for each class. These units are defined by their weight vector, which is composed by the means of the features for every training pattern belonging to the class. After activation of the network by a new sample,
the guard units check a similarity score between the input sample and each class, issuing a “0” output for neurons corresponding to the classes that do not meet the rejection criterion. For an input sample \(I\) and a weight vector \(W\) corresponding to the class of the sample, the scalar product \(I \cdot W\) should be closer to the norm of \(W\) than the scalar product for a sample belonging to a different class. The rejection criterion is then defined by a threshold \(\rho\), where the input is accepted by a class \(i\) only if \(I \cdot W_i \geq (W_i \cdot W_i - \rho)\).

The second strategy is more common, and can be subdivided into threshold-based and custom boundary determination methods. Fels et al. [145] applied a neural network model relying on 5 MLPs to a glove-based hand-gesture-to-speech system. Here, a thresholding strategy on the value of the highest softmax (neuron) output is adopted for the rejection of uncertain gestures. In [343], Singh et al. proposed an additional step to improve this rejection method. Applied to object recognition using a sequence of still images from the Minerva benchmark, their rejection criterion relies on synthetically generated patterns. For each feature, random numbers are sampled between \(\mu - 2.5\sigma\) and \(\mu + 2.5\sigma\) and removed if comprised between a minimum and maximum value. The generated patterns represent thus the outside boundaries of each class, and are trained to produce outputs close to zero for every class. Test samples are then classically rejected if all of their outputs are under a 0.5 threshold. A thresholding on the maximum output corresponds to a spheric reliability zone.

In order to define more flexible boundaries, Gasca et al. [159] proposed to estimate hyperplanes emulating the decision boundaries in the MLP output space in order to identify “overlap” regions, where the samples are more likely to be misclassified. The MLP is combined with a k-NN classification, based on the outputs of the training samples correctly classified after training. When recognizing a pattern, from the two nearest classes, the label is accepted only if the class given by the network matches the one selected by the k-NN, provided that the sample is not in the overlap area between hyperplanes.

### 7.4.3 Learning with tuples

As with the approaches presented in the previous section for pairwise verification, we proposed to use a SNN for similarity metric learning. The underlying model, that is non-linear here, was trained on gesture sample vectors, and the architecture of the neural network is an MLP with one hidden layer and sigmoid activation functions.

**Cosine-based objective function**

While Bromley et al. in [99] originally defined an objective function on separate positive and negative pairs (Eq. 7.1), whose number was arbitrary, Weinberger et al. [397] and Lefebvre et al. [231] proposed an error criterion based on triplets, with one reference example, one negative and one positive examples (Eq. 7.7 and 7.8). In order to keep symmetric roles for every class, we proposed a novel objective function defined over sets of training examples \(T = \{R; P_+; N_1; \ldots; N_K\}\) involving one reference example \(R\), one positive examples \(P_+\) and \(K\) negatives \(N_j\), one for each class (see Fig. 7.5). Thus, for a given set \(T_s\) in one training iteration, we define:

\[
E_W(T_s) = (1 - \cos(O_R, O_P))^2 + \sum_{j,j \neq i} (0 - \cos(O_R, O_{N_j}))^2 .
\]  
\(7.19\)

And the overall objective is:

\[
E_W = \sum_s E_W(T_s) ,
\]  
\(7.20\)
7.4. Class-balanced Siamese Neural Networks for gesture and action recognition

Figure 7.5: Proposed SNN training architecture with tuples.

for all possible tuples \( T_s \), which can be minimised iteratively, e.g. on randomly selected sets \( T_s \), using the Stochastic Gradient Descent and the gradient Backpropagation algorithm.

**Norm regularisation**

As with our TSML method, we wanted to further improve our objective function and convergence by introducing a normalisation and regularisation term. Cosine similarity-based objective functions are defined on the *angle* between the output vectors disregarding their lengths. Thus, introducing additional constraints on the vector norms helps to improve the convergence and to form a more stable embedding.

To this end, we first studied the behaviour of a weight update over the samples projected by the SNN. In the following, we will analyse the cosine metric as a function of two vectors of dimension \( n \),

\[
\cos_{X_1,X_2} : \mathbb{R}^{2n} \to \mathbb{R} \mid (X_1, X_2) \to \frac{1}{2}(1 - \cos(X_1, X_2))^2. \tag{7.21}
\]

Let \((O_1, O_2)\) be a pair of outputs used for update. Given the functions

\[
\cos_{O_1} : \mathbb{R}^n \to \mathbb{R} \mid X \to \frac{1}{2}(1 - \cos(O_1, X))^2 \\
\cos_{O_2} : \mathbb{R}^n \to \mathbb{R} \mid X \to \frac{1}{2}(1 - \cos(X, O_2))^2
\]

respectively evaluated at the points \( O_2 \) and \( O_1 \), the \( \cos_{X_1,X_2} \) directional derivative at \((O_1, O_2)\) can be expressed as the concatenation of the two directional derivatives \( \nabla_{\cos_{O_1}}(O_2) \) and \( \nabla_{\cos_{O_2}}(O_1) \).

We showed that every gradient descent step will increase the norms for both samples. Considering the function \( \cos_{O_1} \), the update of \( O_2 \) is

\[
O_2^{t+1} = O_2^t - \lambda \nabla_{\cos_{O_1}}(O_2), \lambda \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{7.23}
\]

Figure 7.6 gives a graphical illustration in three dimensions. The line directed by the vector \( \frac{O_2}{\|O_2\|} \) belongs to the equipotential for the \( \cos_{O_1} \) function. By definition, we can conclude that the directional derivative \( \nabla_{\cos_{O_1}}(O_2) \) is orthogonal to \( O_2 \). According to Pythagoras’ theorem, we can conclude:

\[
\|O_2^{t+1}\|^2 = \|O_2^t\|^2 + \lambda^2 \|\nabla_{\cos_{O_1}}(O_2)\|^2 \Rightarrow \|O_2^{t+1}\| > \|O_2^t\|. \tag{7.24}
\]
Increasing the norms of the output vectors may incur progressive divergence. Moreover, with hyperbolic tangent activation functions, the output space is a hyper-cube of dimension \( n \), which restricts the norms to a maximum of \( \sqrt{n} \). Therefore, we proposed to add constraints on the norms of every output by forcing them to 1 and thus avoid any undesired saturation effects.

We modify our objective function \( E_{W_1} \) (see Eq. 7.19) for a training subset \( T_s \):

\[
E_{W_2}(T_s) = E_{W_1}(T_s) + \sum_{x_p \in T_s} \left( 1 - \|O_{X_p}\|^2 \right) + \sum_{\lambda \in N_k} \left( 0 - \frac{O_{R_k} \cdot O_{N_l}}{\|O_{R_k}\| \|O_{N_l}\|} \right)^2 + \sum_{x_p \in T_s} \left( 1 - \|O_{X_p}\|^2 \right). \tag{7.25}
\]

Given \( \forall (O_1, O_2) \in (\mathbb{R}^n, \mathbb{R}^n) \), \( \cos(O_1, O_2) = \frac{O_1 \cdot O_2}{\|O_1\| \|O_2\|} \), we also propose to replace the cosine distance for each pair by the scalar product of the pair outputs, since the norms of the two outputs are set to one during training.

Thus, the final objective function for one training subset \( T_s \) is defined as:

\[
E_W(T_s) = \left( 1 - O_{R_k} \cdot O_{X_p} \right)^2 + \sum_{\lambda \in N_k} \left( 0 - O_{R_k} \cdot O_{N_l} \right)^2 + \sum_{x_p \in T_s} \left( 1 - \|O_{X_p}\|^2 \right)^2. \tag{7.26}
\]

This loss function can be minimised iteratively using Stochastic Gradient Descent and the gradient Backpropagation algorithm that takes into account the weight sharing and several activations by the different samples in each set \( T_s \).

Since the SNN is trained to evaluate similarities between multiple samples simultaneously, our assumption was that unknown samples are projected in a feature space in a coherent manner with known classes. To validate this hypothesis experimentally, we proposed a new SNN rejection strategy explained in the following.

**Proposed rejection strategies**

Once the SNN is trained, the output layer gives us a feature vector representing a similarity measure of a set of samples. For classification of samples, any standard classifier can be applied to these feature vectors. We choose a k-NN classification based on the cosine similarity metric in order to prove the validity and reliability of the learned projection. Finally, our rejection criterion consists in a single threshold, common to all classes, on the distance to the closest known sample. This same thresholding criterion is applied to another model based on DTW in order to get the
7.4. Class-balanced Siamese Neural Networks for gesture and action recognition

closest comparison possible and to a standard MLP, trained in a supervised way, with one output neuron per class and the well-known softmax activation function. Two types of rejection strategies are then studied. The first kind encompasses all incorrect classifications, and tests the ability of a system to identify samples whose classification is too uncertain to be accepted. The main challenge for the model is to isolate the misclassified samples first. The second kind of rejection concerns “unknown” classes, and aims at evaluating a model performance in isolating elements it was not trained for from the rest of the known classes. This type rejection is only rarely taken into account by existing methods, or is taken care of by another model specifically trained for this task. The main experimental results are summarised in section 7.4.5.

7.4.4 Polar sine-based objective function

While the regularised tuple-based formulation of the objective function of Eq. 7.26 is more suited to handle angular updates, it turns out impractical when the number of classes increases. Moreover, in the derivative of the mean squared error objective, the cosine error is weighted by the difference between the target and the cosine value which tends to zero and slows down the convergence. Thus, we proposed a new error function that preserves the targets, while addressing both of these problems. More specifically, we proposed a reformulation of the objective function based on a higher-dimensional dissimilarity measure, the polar sine metric.

Inspired by the 2D sine function, Lerman et al. [236] define the polar sine for a set \( V_m = \{v_1, \ldots, v_n\} \) of \( m \)-dimensional linearly independent vectors \((m > n)\) as a normalized hyper-volume. Given \( A = [v_1 \ v_2 \ \cdots \ v_m] \) and its transpose \( A^\top \):

\[
PolarSine(v_1, \ldots, v_n) = \sqrt{\det (A^\top A)} \prod_{i=1}^n \|v_i\|. \tag{7.27}
\]

In the special case where \( m = n \), the matrix product in the determinant is replaced by the square matrix \( A \).

Given the matrix \( S \) such that \( \forall (i, j) \in [1, \ldots, n]^2 \), \( S_{i,j} = \cos(v_i, v_j) \), this measure can be rewritten as \( PolarSine(v_1, \ldots, v_n) = \sqrt{\det (S)} \). For numerical stability reasons during the derivation process and to make this value independent from the number of classes, we introduced the polar sine metric:

\[
psine(v_1, \ldots, v_n) = n \sqrt{\det (S)}. \tag{7.28}
\]

The polar sine metric only depends on the angles between every vector of the set. It reaches its maximum value when all the vectors are orthogonal, and thus can be used as a measure for dissimilarity.

With two comparable similarity estimators whose values are between 0 and 1, one for similar and one for dissimilar samples, it is now possible to redefine the objective function for our training sets \( T_s \):

\[
E_W(T_s) = Esim_W(T_s) + E\overline{sim}_W(T_s),
\]

\[
E_{sim}(T_s) = (1 - \cos(O_{R_k}, O_{P_j}))^2,
\]

\[
E\overline{sim}_W(T_s) = (1 - psine(O_{R_k}, O_{N_1}, \ldots, O_{N_K}))^2. \tag{7.29}
\]

Optimizing the polar sine corresponds to assigning a target of 0 to the cosine value of every pair of outputs from different vectors drawn in \( T_s \setminus \{R_k\} \), i.e. we assign a target for every pair of dissimilar samples. This actually holds more information than our original cosine or regularised objective functions, which would only define a target for pairs including the reference sample. As a consequence, the \( psine \) function allows for a complete representation, in every training
set, of every available relationship present in the dataset. Given a fixed number of sources, the initial inputs are transformed into maximally independent, multi-dimensional components. Thus, our Siamese network, combined with this new objective function presents all the properties of a supervised, stochastic non-linear Independent Component Analysis, with an additional advantage: the number of components is adjustable by modifying the network output layer structure.

7.4.5 Experiments

We evaluated the proposed SNN approaches on several different datasets related to gesture and action recognition with inertial sensor data, and we compared it to a standard supervised MLP [126], a DTW-based model [126] and a SVM-based approach [109]. I will present here a summary of our results for two of the tested datasets.

**Internal Orange Labs gesture dataset (DB1):** this is one of the private dataset that we collected using an Android Samsung Nexus S mobile phone. It comprises 40 repetitions of 18 different classes (see Fig. 7.4) performed by a single individual, for a total of 720 records. After low-pass filtering, resampling and normalisation of the 3D accelerometer and gyroscope signals in 45 time steps, we obtain data vectors of fixed size \(45 \times 6 = 270\) that we used for training and evaluating the different classification methods.

**Multimodal Human Action Dataset (MHAD):** this public dataset [294] comprises the recordings from 12 participants performing 11 different actions (with 5 repetitions) (see Fig. 7.4). Although there are multiple types of recorded sensors, we focus our study on two main sensors, namely the right wrist inertial sensor \(A_1\) and motion capture \(M_2\), as they gave the best classification results for all of the tested methods. We applied a similar pre-processing step as for the internal dataset DB1 and obtain data vectors of size \(45 \times 3 = 145\).

The same network architecture is selected for every SNN variant: a 2-layer neural network, with an input size adapted to the data dimensionality (135 neurons for MHAD), a 45-neuron hidden layer, and a 90-neuron output layer. The hyperbolic tangent is chosen as the activation function for every neuron, and the learning rate is set to 0.001. During training, the network is independently and successively activated with every sample of a training set. Each activation state is stored, and reused to compute the weight updates. For more details refer to [2].

First, we studied the ability of a model to reject unknown gesture classes with the DB1 dataset. For training the model, 14 classes are used, with 5 repetitions per class. The test data comprises 16 repetitions from these 14 classes, as well as every record available from the 4 last unused classes, for a total of 224 records from known classes and 160 records from unknown classes (41.6%). The SNN is trained on tuples using the norm-regularised objective function of Eq. 7.26. Figure 7.7 depicts the curves showing the classification rates for DTW, MLP and the proposed SNN varying the rejection threshold. The SNN model presents a superior capacity to isolate unknown samples. Around the 41.6% landmark, where every unknown sample can be rejected, the SNN presents a correct classification rate of 94%, while the DTW and the MLP get lower scores of 92% and 88%, respectively. Furthermore, in its best configurations, depicted by the means of the deviation, the SNN is the closest to the perfect rate as the rejection rate increases.

Finally, we evaluated the performances of each SNN objective function variant with a tuple-based training selection strategy, denominated costuples (c.f. Eq. 7.19), norm-regularised (c.f. Eq. 7.26) and psine (c.f. Eq. 7.29). The results for MHAD are shown in Table 7.5. For our analysis, we focus on the classification rates obtained from isolated sensor data with the ac-
7.4. Class-balanced Siamese Neural Networks for gesture and action recognition

![Figure 7.7: DTW, MLP and SNN comparison with the DB1 gesture dataset.](image)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>(A_1)</th>
<th>(M_{20})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DTW [126]</td>
<td>0.790 ± 0.107</td>
<td>0.888 ± 0.076</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MLP [126]</td>
<td>0.818 ± 0.099</td>
<td>0.913 ± 0.067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SVM [109]</td>
<td>0.867</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SNN cos-tuples (Eq. 7.19)</td>
<td>0.915 ± 0.102</td>
<td>0.906 ± 0.080</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SNN norm-regularised (Eq. 7.26)</td>
<td>0.886 ± 0.079</td>
<td>0.910 ± 0.065</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SNN psine (Eq. 7.29)</td>
<td>\textbf{0.918 ± 0.091}</td>
<td>\textbf{0.924 ± 0.068}</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.5: Classification rates of the different SNN models and the state of the art on MHAD.

celerometer \(A_1\) and the motion capture sensor \(M_{20}\), and we report the results for the DTW and MLP methods proposed in [126] and the SVM-based approach [109] on these same sensors. The SNN-based approaches globally show superior results on the inertial sensor \(A_1\), with a lowest score of 88.6% for the norm-regularised SNN, compared to a best score in the literature of 86.7% for the SVM approach. This shows that our SNN-based approach is very competitive. This conclusion is verified for the \(M_{20}\) sensor. Our SNN-psine approach, implementing the polar sine metric and tuple-based set selection strategies contributions, gives the best result of 92.4%.

7.4.6 Conclusion

In this section, we introduced new SNN similarity metric learning methods with objective functions operating on \textit{tuples} that are well adapted for classification problems. Our contributions on the norm regularisation term and the polar sine improved the convergence of the models, the handling of rejection as well as the overall classification performance. We experimentally showed on gesture and action recognition applications that this approach can better cope with unknown classes and that the polar sine-based SNN outperforms state-of-the-art methods in terms of the classification rate.
7.5 Conclusion

This concludes the chapter on similarity metric learning with SNN for face and gesture verification and classification. The work described here mainly focused on improving the convergence and learning strategies for SNN based on MLP models in the context of pair-wise verification and classification. The neural network models that we employed were rather shallow, although we successfully conducted some experiments on TSML with deep CNNs for face verification [4]. This is mainly due to the relatively small amount of annotated training data that is available for the studied applications. Deeper, more complex models would have easily overfit to the training data. Even with a strong regularisation, deep neural networks only show their full potential with large amounts of training data, and, in that case, mostly CNN-based models are used for learning deep visual feature hierarchies which is not appropriate for other types of data like inertial signals. Finally, these relatively simple models allowed us to better understand the behaviour of convergence and of the learnt linear and non-linear projections with respect to different hyper-parameters.

In the following chapter, I will present our work on person re-identification from images. For this application, more training data is available, and we used deeper and more complex models and neural network architectures in order to perform similarity metric learning and ranking of pedestrian images.
8 Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification

8.1 Introduction

In this chapter, I will present the work conducted in the context of the PhD thesis of Yiqiang Chen [116] co-supervised with Atilla Baskurt (LIRIS) and Jean-Yves Dufour (Thales Services, ThereSIS). We proposed several contributions on similarity metric learning with deep neural network models applied to the problem of person re-identification in images. The application

![Figure 8.1: Illustration of person re-identification in video streams with non-overlapping views.](image)

and problem is illustrated in Fig. 8.1. A network of cameras with non-overlapping views provides continuous video streams where the appearing persons should be recognised within the same or across different views and at different points in time. That is, given a query image of a person from one view \(i.e\). the probe, the goal is to re-identify this person in images from the same or from other views \(i.e\). called the gallery images.

Here, we did not work on the person detection and tracking (MOT) problem, and we considered that efficient algorithms for this are available providing us with pedestrian images that are cropped but whose identities are not matched (as illustrated in the right of Fig. 8.1).

This task bears a certain number of scientific challenges in the fields of computer vision and machine learning some of which are illustrated in Fig. 8.2. For example, the intra-class variations can be very large due to different lighting conditions, different view points and body
Chapter 8. Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification

Figure 8.2: Examples of some person re-identification challenges. Each pair of images shows the same person except (g) and (h).

poses. Also, the images maybe of very low resolution and partial occlusions may occur frequently. Although, we assume that clothing does not change too much in a limited time frame, this may still happen when people take off a coat or a hat or carry a bag in a different way. Also, the inter-class variation may be very small since people tend to wear similar clothes. From a machine learning point of view, an effective model is required that is robust to the above variations and that generalises well to persons (i.e., classes) and possibly view points that it has not been trained for. Further, in realistic settings a query image needs to be matched to images in a very large gallery set. To build such models using statistical machine learning approaches, often the training data is very limited, and their annotation is difficult and laborious.

We employed deep neural network models for this task, because of their capacity of automatically and jointly learning robust visual features and classifiers. To prevent them from overfitting in this difficult setting, we used different techniques to combine supervised and weakly supervised learning and to include external data related to more semantic information for the given application, like semantic pedestrian attributes, body orientation or group context. I will describe these different contributions in the following.

8.2 State of the art

Approaches for person re-identification are generally composed of an appearance descriptor to represent the person and a matching function to compare those appearance descriptors. Over the years, numerous contributions have been made to improve both the representation as well as the matching algorithm in order to increase robustness to the variations in pose, lighting, and background inherent to the problem. In the literature, person re-identification is mostly performed using the person appearance in a single colour image. However, some approaches also use temporal information, depth images, gait, camera topology etc.

8.2.1 Feature extraction approaches

The appearance of pedestrians from static images can be characterised according to three aspects: colour, shape, and texture. Colour histograms are widely used to characterise colour distributions. Also, some photometric transformation or normalisation methods are proposed: for example, Porikli et al. [311] learned a brightness transfer function, Bak et al. [77] applied a histogram equalisation technique and Liao et al. [250] applied the Retinex algorithm to pre-
8.2. State of the art

Figure 8.3: Illustrations of representative approaches of three feature extraction strategies. (a) Patch-based descriptors extracted from a dense grid [337]. (b) Descriptors extracted from segmented body parts [118]. (c) Stripe-based descriptors extracted from horizontal bands [416].

process person images. Therefore, colour features are often combined with shape and texture features, such as Gabor filter banks [148], Scale-invariant feature transform (SIFT) [259], Local Binary Pattern (LBP) [296], and region covariance [371].

In order to get a feature descriptor which is discriminant, and at same time, robust to the different variations, various extraction strategies have been proposed in the literature. Here we divide the approaches into three classes: patch-based descriptors and body part-based descriptors and stripe-based descriptors, as shown in Fig. 8.3.

**Patch-based descriptors**

The holistic representation of the above-mentioned global features shows a high robustness but a relatively low discriminative power, because of losing local detail information. A typical solution is to apply the colour histograms and texture filters on a dense grid. For example, the approach of Zhao et al. [439] computes LAB colour histograms and SIFT features on a grid of $10 \times 10$ overlapping patches at two different scales. Similarly, Liu et al. [257] extract the HSV histogram, gradient histogram and the LBP histogram for each local patch. Then they applied a technique called “local coordinate coding” which is a high-dimensional non-linear learning method projecting the data on lower-dimensional manifolds. The Bag-of-Words (BoW) model is used in [440] with 11-dimensional colour name descriptors [416] extracted for each local patch and aggregated into a global vector. After generating the codebook on training data, the feature responses of each patch are then quantified into visual words and a visual word histogram is used for the matching. Also, Shen et al. [337] extract Dense SIFT and a Dense Colour Histogram from each patch and proposed a specific patch matching process with global spatial constraints.

**Body part-based approaches**

A inherent problem with patch-based methods operating on a fixed grid is that they are sensitive to misalignment due to pose and viewpoint variations. In order to resolve this issue and increase the discriminative power, several approaches exploit the prior knowledge of the person geometry or body structure and try to partition the image appropriately to obtain a pose-invariant representation: For example, Wang et al. [394] segment different (roughly uniform) image regions using local HOG descriptors and model the context of appearance and shape by a co-occurrence matrix over these image regions. Some approaches segment images into meaningful parts like torso, legs, which are semantic and more robust to the viewpoint variation. One well-know method is Symmetry-Driven Accumulation of Local Features (SDALF) proposed by Farenzena et al. [144] which exploits symmetry and asymmetry principles for segmentation and uses statistical measures on the body part regions to describe them and perform the matching.
Bak et al. [77] proposed an approach based on spatial covariance regions which are segmented using 5 HOG-based body part detectors. To better exploit the prior knowledge of plausible body part configurations, Cheng et al. [118] used Pictorial Structures to localise the body parts and match their descriptors based on HSV histograms and Maximally Stable Colour Regions (MSCR).

**Stripe-based approaches**

In most settings, pedestrians are seen from an arbitrary horizontal viewpoint. Thus, some methods extract features on horizontal stripes and are thus invariant to large horizontal shifts in the image. Gray et al. [169] first proposed to divide the pedestrian image into 6 equally-sized horizontal stripes. The approximately correspond to the image regions of the head, upper and lower torso, upper and lower legs and feet. In each stripe, 8 colour channels (RGB, HS, YCbCr) and 19 texture channels (Gabor and Schmid filter banks) are represented. Similarly, Mignon et al. [278] build the feature vector from RGB, YUV and HSV channels and the LBP texture histograms in horizontal stripes. Yang et al. [416] also proposed to use 6 stripes and introduced the salient colour name-based colour descriptor (SCNCD) for pedestrian colour descriptions. The approach proposed by Ma et al. [264] computes covariance matrices on Gabor filter responses at different scales and on different image bands, and the difference of these matrices on consecutive bands is used to build the model. Finally, Liao et al. [250] proposed LOcal Maximal Occurrence (LOMO) features that we also used in our work. Scale-Invariant Local Ternary Patterns (SILTP) and HSV histograms are extracted on each line of the image at different scales, and then only the maximum value is retained for each line.

**8.2.2 Matching approaches**

Based on the extracted features, we can distinguish two types of matching methods. The first consists of learning a matching function in a supervised manner, and the other learns a distance metric in feature space.

**Matching function learning**

Given feature based representations of a pair of images, an intuitive approach is to compute the geodesic distance between the descriptors, for instance, using the Bhattacharyya distance between the histogram-based descriptors or the L2-norm between descriptors in a Euclidean space. However, some features may be more relevant for appearance matching than others. Therefore, several approaches have been proposed to learn a matching function in a supervised manner from a dataset of image pairs.

For instance, the method of Schwartz and Davis [334] transforms the high-dimensional features into low-dimensional discriminant vectors using Partial Least Squares (PLS) in a one-against-all scheme. Lin et al. [251] proposed an approach based on the Kullback-Leibler divergence of feature distributions of two images and pairwise dissimilarity profiles learnt from training data. Gray et al. [169] use boosting to find the best ensemble of localised features for matching. And Prosser et al. [313] proposed an ensemble of RankSVMs to solve person re-identification as a ranking problem.

**Metric learning**

Compared to standard generic distance measures, e.g. the Euclidean or Bhattacharyya distance, a metric that is learnt specifically for person images is more discriminative for the given task of re-identification and more robust to large variations of person images across views.

Most distance metrics learning approaches learn a Mahalanobis-like distance: $D_2(x, y) = (x - y)^T M (x - y)$ where $M$ is a positive semi-definite (PSD) matrix of which the elements are to
be learnt. Several works factorise $M$ as $M = w^T w$, ensuring the PSD constraint and implicitly defining a (potentially low-dimensional) projection into an Euclidean space which reflects the distance constraints. We distinguish two types of methods explained in the following.

The first class of methods generally defines an objective function based on distance constraints. The global idea of constraints is to keep all the vectors of the same class closer while pushing vectors of different classes further apart. $M$ is solved by a constrained convex optimisation method. For example, Mignon et al. [278] presented a method called Pairwise Constrained Component Analysis (PCCA), and Zheng et al. [443] proposed the Probabilistic Relative Distance Comparison (PRDC) model, both defining pair-wise constraints. In contrast, the approach of Dikmen et al. [134] called Large Margin Nearest Neighbour classification with Rejection (LMNN-R) operates on constraints that are defined on the neighbourhood of examples. To avoid the tedious iterative optimisation procedure, Koestinger et al. [216], in their “Keep It Simple and Straightforward Method” (KISSME), propose a formulation that allows for a closed-form solution of the matrix $M$.

The methods of the second class are generally variants of the Linear Discriminative Analysis (LDA). The approaches are based on the difference of the feature vectors of two classes. The positive class consists in pairs of images of the same person acquired by different cameras, and the negative class consists in pairs of images of different person acquired by different cameras. They learn directly the projection $w$ to a discriminative low-dimensional subspace where the between-class variance is maximised and the within-class variance is minimised. In LDA, the objective function is formulated as: $J(w) = \frac{w^T S_b w}{w^T S_w w}$, where $S_b$ and $S_w$ are the between-class and within-class scatter matrices, respectively. Methods belonging to this class are LFDA proposed by Pedagadi et al. [303] combining LDA and Locality-Preserving Projection for dimensionality reduction, the Cross Quadratic Discriminative Analysis (XQDA) metric by Liao et al. [250] combining Quadratic Discriminative Analysis (QDA) and KISSME and the Null Foley-Sammon Transform (NFST) by Zhang et al. [434].

8.2.3 Deep learning approaches

Methods based on deep neural networks jointly learn discriminative features and a matching function or a similarity metric. Several approaches have been presented in the literature.

8.2.3.1 Architectures

Some deep learning architectures are conceived to operate on stripes over the input image. For example, Yi et al. [420] first applied a CNN on re-identification. Given two person images, they are first separated into three over-lapped horizontal stripes respectively, and the image pairs are matched by three Siamese Convolutional Neural Networks (SCNN). Varior et al. [374] proposed to integrate a gating layer in a SCNN to compare the extracted local patterns for an image pair at the medium-level and propagate more relevant features to the higher layers of the network. Spatial dependency between stripes are exploited in [375] by a Long Short Term Memory (LSTM) network operating on LOMO [250] and SCNCD [416] features extracted on horizontal stripes. Cheng et al. [117] proposed to combine the global and stripe feature extraction using a multi-channel CNN model operating on different parts of the image.

Some methods directly integrate some kind of patch matching into a CNN architecture to handle misalignment and geometric transformations. For instance, Li et al. [247] proposed an architecture called Filter pairing neural network directly performing the patch matching using integrated displacement matrices. However, this architecture is computationally complex and
has thus been simplified by Ahmed et al. [61] introducing a cross-input neighbourhood difference layer.

Other methods integrate a body part-based feature extraction within a deep neural network architecture. Zhao et al. [437], for example, proposed an architecture composed of three components: a body region proposal network (locating human body joints), a feature extraction network and a feature fusion network. However, this requires training data with annotated body parts. In contrast, Li et al. [239] proposed to localise latent pedestrian parts through Spatial Transform Networks (STN) [199]. Zhao et al. [438] proposed to jointly model the human body regions that are discriminative for person matching with neither prior knowledge nor labelled data and compute a compact representation. An image feature map is first extracted by a deep Fully Convolutional Neural network (FCN), and discriminative features are automatically detected and extracted in several network branches to perform the matching, which has been trained using a siamese structure and triplets of examples.

### 8.2.3.2 Objective functions

As we have seen in the previous chapter, by appropriately defining objective functions, one can learn a non-linear projection into a feature space in which the similarity of pedestrian is well represented. In the following, we will rather use the term “loss function” as it is common in the recent literature for deep neural networks since there is often no regularisation term. Several loss functions for person re-identification exist in the literature. Yi et al. [420] used the deviance loss in a Siamese network, as follows:

\[
E_{\text{deviance}} = \ln(e^{-2sl} + 1),
\]

where \(-1 \leq s \leq 1\) is the similarity score and \(l = 1\) or \(-1\) is the label (c.f. Eq. 7.9). And in [61, 247], the re-identification task is considered as an image pair classification problem deciding whether an image pair is from the same person or not. Ding et al. [135] first applied the triplet loss (c.f. Eq. 7.7) to train a CNN for person re-identification. Some methods combine different objective functions to improve the performance. For example, Cheng et al. [117] proposed an improved variant of the triplet loss function combining it with the contrastive loss. Zheng et al. [444] combined an image pair classification loss and the contrastive loss (c.f. Eq. 7.4, 7.6). And Chen et al. [113] applied a quadruplet loss which samples four images from three identities and minimises the difference between a positive pair from one identity and a negative pair from two different identities and they combine this quadruplet loss with the triplet loss.

### 8.2.4 Evaluation measures

The Cumulated Matching Characteristics (CMC) curve and the mean Average Precision (mAP) are the two most widely used evaluation measures for person re-identification.

CMC evaluates the top \(n\) nearest images in the gallery set with respect to one probe image. If a correct match of a query image is at the \(k\)th position \((k <= n)\), then this query is considered as success of rank \(n\). A curve can thus be drawn for varying \(n\), with \(n\) in the x-axis and the proportion of correct matches in the y-axis. Also, we denote the CMC curve value at a given rank \(n\) the “Rank n score”.

mAP is the mean value of the average precision of all queries. The average precision is defined as the area under the Precision-Recall curve.
8.3 Leveraging additional semantic information – attributes

8.3.1 Introduction

As in previous work in the literature [117, 135, 419], we proposed to tackle the person re-identification problem with a similarity metric learning approach based on SNNs since the classes are not known a priori and since we would like to directly learn from data a generic (non-linear) metric between image pairs that robustly expresses the similarities (and dissimilarities) of persons. Re-identification of a given query image is then performed by computing this metric on all images in the gallery set and returning the one(s) with the smallest distance.

Our first contribution consisted in building a SNN-based model that is trained on triplets and that incorporates semantic attributes in order to assist the re-identification improving its performance [3, 15]. The idea is that such mid-level attributes, like gender, accessories and clothing, represent characteristic features that are highly invariant to viewpoint, body pose and other image variations. Moreover, they could be used for so-called “zero-shot” identification, i.e. querying by an attribute-based description instead of an image. Since biometric features like faces are often not visible or of too low resolution to be helpful in surveillance, pedestrian attributes could be considered as soft-biometrics and provide additional discriminant information.

Our proposed approach first trains a multi-class CNN in a supervised way to recognise a set of pre-defined person attributes from images and then combines this neural network with a SNN trained in a weakly supervised way on triplets to model a similarity metric between person images.

8.3.2 State of the art

8.3.2.1 Attribute recognition

In the pioneering work of Vaquero et al. [373], the person image is segmented into regions, and each region is associated with a classifier based on Haar-like features and dominant colours. Layne et al. [227] annotated 15 attributes on the VIPeR dataset and proposed an approach to extract a 2784-dimensional low-level colour and texture feature vector for each image and to train an SVM for each attribute. The method of Zhu et al. [448] determines the upper and lower body regions according to the average image and extracts colour and texture features (HSV, MB-LBP, HOG) in these two regions. Then, an Adaboost classifier is trained on these features to recognise attributes. The drawback of these approaches is that all attributes are treated independently. That is, the relation between different attributes is not taken into account. Zhu et al. [449] tried to overcome this limitation by introducing an interaction model based on their Adaboost approach [448] learning an attribute interaction regressor. The approach from Deng et al. [133] used a Markov Random Field (MRF) for this purpose.

Some CNN models have also been proposed for pedestrian attribute recognition, e.g., the one by Li et al. [238] based on CaffeNet and Sudowe et al. [358] called Attribute Convolutional Net (ACN). Zhu et al. [450, 451] proposed to divide the pedestrian images into 15 overlapping parts where each part connects to several CNN pipelines with several convolution and pooling layers.

8.3.2.2 Re-identification with attributes

Some works have used pedestrian attributes to assist with the re-identification task, e.g. the SVM-based approach of Layne et al. [227]. In their approach, the final distance between two pedestrian images is computed as a weighted sum of low-level feature distance and attribute
distance. Li et al. [237] embedded middle-level clothing attributes via a latent SVM framework for more robust person re-identification. The approach introduced by Khamis et al. [213] learns a discriminative projection into a joint appearance-attribute subspace in order to leverage the interaction between attributes and appearance for matching.

The approach of Zhu et al. [450] recognises attributes with deep neural networks then calculates a pedestrian distance by weighting the attribute distance and a low-level feature-based person appearance distance. McLaughlin et al. [276] proposed to perform person re-identification and attribute recognition in a multi-task learning. Their loss function is a weighted sum of the attribute and identification classification loss as well as a Siamese loss. They show that this multi-task joint learning improves the re-identification performance. Matsukawa et al. [275] proposed to fine-tune the well-known Alexnet with attribute combination labels to increase the discriminative power. Further they concatenated the CNN embedding directly with LOMO features and used the metric learning method XQDA [250] to learn a feature space. Su et al. [356] presented a three-stage procedure that pre-trains a CNN with attribute labels of an independent dataset, then fine-tunes the network with identity labels and finally fine-tunes the network with the learned attribute feature embedding on the combined dataset. The main difference of these approaches to ours is the way of making use of attributes to assist in the re-identification task.

8.3.3 Attribute recognition approach
8.3.3.1 Overall procedure and architecture

The architecture of the proposed attribute recognition approach is shown in Fig. 8.4. The framework consists of two branches. One branch is a CNN extracting higher-level discriminative features by several succeeding convolution and pooling operations that become specific to different body parts at a given stage (P3) in order to account for the possible displacements of pedestrians due to pose variations. Another branch extracts the viewpoint-invariant Local Maximal Occurrence (LOMO) features, a robust visual feature representation that has been specifically designed for viewpoint-invariant pedestrian attribute recognition and achieving state-of-the-art results [250]. The extracted LOMO features are then projected into a linear subspace using Principal Component Analysis (PCA) and then fused with the CNN output using
8.3. Leveraging additional semantic information – attributes

A fully-connected layer and a final (fully-connected) output layer with one neuron per attribute to recognise.

The architecture of the CNN is a succession of convolution and max pooling layers that is relatively standard in the literature, up to the pooling layer P3. At this stage (P3), we propose to divide the resulting feature maps vertically into 4 equal parts roughly corresponding to the regions of head, upper body, upper legs and lower legs. For each part, similar to [375], we use two layers (C4, C5) with 1D horizontal convolutions of size $3 \times 1$ without zero-padding reducing the feature maps to single column vectors. These 1D convolutions allow to extract high-level discriminative patterns for different horizontal stripes of the input image. In the last convolution layer, the number of channels is increased to 150, and these feature maps are given to a fully-connected layer (fc1) to generate an output vector of dimension 500. All the convolution layers in our model are followed by batch normalisation and ReLU activation functions.

We experimentally showed that this specific CNN architecture as well as the fusion of these discriminant deep features with the more “invariant” LOMO features provides a powerful model for pedestrian attribute recognition giving state-of-the-art results on public benchmarks.

8.3.3.2 Training

The proposed CNN is trained in a supervised way using a dataset of pedestrian images with annotated attributes. The weights are initialised at random and updated using Stochastic Gradient Descent minimising the global loss function (Eq. 8.2) on the given training set. Since most attributes are not mutually exclusive, i.e., pedestrians can have several properties at the same time, the attribute recognition is a multi-label classification problem. Thus, the multi-label version of the sigmoid cross entropy is used as the overall loss function:

$$E = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{l=1}^{L} \left[w_l y_{il} \log(\sigma(x_{il})) + (1 - y_{il}) \log(1 - \sigma(x_{il}))\right],$$

(8.2)

with \(\sigma(x) = \frac{1}{1 + \exp(-x)}\),

where \(L\) is the number of labels (attributes), \(N\) is the number of training examples, and \(y_{il}, x_{il}\) are respectively the \(l^{th}\) label and classifier output for the \(i^{th}\) image. Usually, in the training set, the two classes for an attribute are highly unbalanced. That is, for most attributes, the positive label appears generally less frequently than the negative one. To handle this issue, we added a weight \(w\) to the loss function: \(w = -\log_2(p_l)\), where \(p_l\) is the positive proportion of attribute \(l\) in the dataset.

8.3.4 Attribute-assisted person re-identification

8.3.4.1 Overall approach

We proposed a new CNN-based similarity metric learning approach for pedestrian re-identification [3, 15] that effectively combines automatically learned visual features with semantic attributes, extracted by our method described in the previous section. The overall framework is shown in Fig. 8.5. The framework is composed of two neural networks that are pre-trained. The first is a deep CNN that is trained in a supervised way to classify identities on a separate training set using the softmax cross-entropy loss:

$$E_{identification} = - \sum_{k=1}^{N} y_k \log(P(y_k = 1|x)) \quad \text{with}$$

(8.3)
(8.4)

\[ P(y_j = 1|x) = \frac{e^{W_j^T x + b_j}}{\sum_{k=1}^{N} e^{W_k^T x + b_k}} \]

(For more details refer to [20]). Then we remove the output classification layers of the network and keep the other parts of the network which are related to feature selection. The second part is our attribute recognition network that is trained as described in the previous section (and without the LOMO features). After training, we also remove the output layers and keep all the other layers up to the first fully-connected layer (fc1). The output vectors from the hidden layers of the two CNNs represent high-level features related to attributes and pedestrian identities respectively. In order to combine the extracted features effectively, we propose to integrate both output vectors in a new neural network that automatically learns these fusion parameters on the re-identification task in a triplet architecture (described in the next section). This leads to a fully neural architecture that can be trained and fine-tuned as a whole to maximise the re-identification performance.

### 8.3.4.2 Fusion by triplet architecture

The pre-trained attribute CNN and identification CNN are combined (using their intermediate fully-connected layers fc1 and adding a new fully-connected layer) and trained in a triplet architecture (see Fig. 8.5). Here, we proposed to use an improved triplet loss with hard example selection to learn the optimal fusion of the two types of features. Unlike the classical triplet loss, a \((K + 2)\)-tuple of images instead of a triplet is projected into the feature space. The tuple includes one reference image \(R\), one positive image \(P_+\) and \(K\) negative images \(N_j\). With their
8.3. Leveraging additional semantic information – attributes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Accuracy Rate (%)</th>
<th>Recall@FPR=0.1</th>
<th>AUC</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MRFr2[133]</td>
<td>80.8</td>
<td>65.6</td>
<td>87.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DeepMar[238]</td>
<td>85.4</td>
<td>79.9</td>
<td>93.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mlcnn[451]</td>
<td>86.6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ours</td>
<td><strong>90.0</strong></td>
<td><strong>79.9</strong></td>
<td><strong>93.0</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.1: Attribute recognition results on PETA (in %).

respective CNN output vectors \( O_R, O_P \) and \( O_{N_j} \), this constraint is defined as:

\[
\min(\|O_R - O_{N_j}\|_2^2) - \|O_R - O_P\|_2^2 > m ,
\]

(8.5)

with \( m \) being a margin (set to 1 in our experiments). Similarly to the distance learning approach “Top-push” proposed by [425], hard example mining in [61, 332] or moderate positive example mining in [338], the idea is to find the most appropriate example(s) to update the model. The negative example that is closest to the reference is considered the hardest example and having the highest potential for improvement. The network is thus updated efficiently by pushing the hardest example further away from the reference. The intuition is that if the positive example is ranked in front of the hardest negative example then the positive example is ranked first, which is our goal. In classic triplet loss, a large part of triplets does not violate the triplet constraint (c.f. Eq. 8.5). Thus, these triplets are useless for learning. The selection among \( K \) negative examples reduces the number of unused training data and can make the training more efficient.

To further enhance the loss function, as an extension of [117], we added a term including the distance between the reference example and the positive example. The loss function (called "min-triplet" loss) of one iteration is defined as:

\[
E_{\text{min-triplet}} = -\max(\|O_R - O_P\|_2^2 - \min_j(\|O_R - O_{N_j}\|_2^2) + m, 0) + \alpha \|O_R - O_P\|_2 .
\]

(8.6)

The first part of the loss is a comparison of two distances which defines a relative relationship in the feature space. The second part corresponds to an absolute distance in feature space weighted by a factor \( \alpha \) (set to 0.02 in our experiments). Combining these two constraints leads to a more efficient learning of the resulting manifold that better represents the semantic similarities.

Using this loss function, we trained the additional fully-connected layer for the fusion, and, at the same time, we fine-tune the other parts of the network, i.e. the weights are updated at a lower rate. Unlike other approaches[213, 227, 237, 276], the advantage of our method is that the attributes do not need to be annotated on the re-identification dataset. We can make use of a separate dataset with annotated attributes and transfer this information to a re-identification dataset by fine-tuning.

8.3.5 Experiments

We first evaluated the accuracy of our attribute recognition approach on three different datasets: PETA (19 000 images, 65 attributes), APiS (3661 images, 11 attributes) and VIPeR (632 images, 21 attributes) (see Fig. 8.6) using the evaluation protocols proposed in the literature. The evaluation measures are the accuracy, the average recall at a False Positive Rate (FPR) of 0.1 and the Area Under Curve (AUC) of the average Receiver Operating Characteristic (ROC) curve. The results in Tables 8.1-8.3 show that our approach outperforms all state-of-the-art methods: MRFr2 [133], DeepMar [238], mlcnn [451], fusion [448], interact [449] and svm[227].
Chapter 8. Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification

Figure 8.6: Some example images from pedestrian attribute datasets.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Accuracy</th>
<th>Recall@FPR=0.1</th>
<th>AUC</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ours</td>
<td>fusion[448]</td>
<td>interact[449]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>89.3</td>
<td>62.1</td>
<td>64.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>89.5</td>
<td>86.7</td>
<td>90.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>87.2</td>
<td>90.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.2: Attribute recognition results on APiS (in %).

Then we evaluated our attribute-assisted person re-identification framework on the public CUHK03 dataset [247] containing 13,164 images of 1,360 pedestrians (automatically cropped by a person detection algorithm). We pre-trained the attribute CNN branch on the Peta dataset, and the identity CNN branch on CUHK03 (the identities of the test set are different from the training set). Our evaluation criterion for re-identification is the proportion of test (query) images for which rank=n, i.e. in the ranking according to the Euclidean distance in the learnt projection space, a correct match is within the first n images. Table 8.4 shows the results for rank=1,5,10 compared to the state of the art on the CUHK03 (“detected”) dataset. Our approach outperformed all other methods showing the effectiveness of our SNN similarity metric learning framework with improved triplet loss. One can also see the significant contribution of the attributes to the overall performance.

8.3.6 Conclusion

In this section, I presented our recent work on person re-identification showing that the use of additional semantic information (the attributes) can considerably improve the performance of similarity metric learning. Our first contribution was a powerful framework for attribute recognition fusing discriminant deep CNN features trained on pedestrian images with highly invariant LOMO features and achieving state-of-the-art classification accuracy on three public datasets. Then, by using both identity and attribute information and also an improved triplet objective function with hard negative examples and finally by employing effective pre-training and fusion strategies on appropriate CNN architectures, we were able to obtain state-of-the-art
8.4. A gated SNN approach

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method</th>
<th>rank=1</th>
<th>rank =5</th>
<th>rank =10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>FPNN [247]</td>
<td>19.9</td>
<td>49.3</td>
<td>64.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Convnet [61]</td>
<td>45.0</td>
<td>75.3</td>
<td>83.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOMO+XQDA [250]</td>
<td>46.3</td>
<td>78.9</td>
<td>88.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SS-SVM [436]</td>
<td>51.2</td>
<td>80.8</td>
<td>89.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SI-CI [386]</td>
<td>52.2</td>
<td>84.3</td>
<td>92.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DNS [434]</td>
<td>57.3</td>
<td>80.1</td>
<td>88.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S-ISTM [375]</td>
<td>57.3</td>
<td>80.1</td>
<td>88.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S-CNN SQ [374]</td>
<td>61.8</td>
<td>80.9</td>
<td>88.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAN [255]</td>
<td>63.1</td>
<td>82.9</td>
<td>88.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ours Identity only</td>
<td>59.7</td>
<td>86.1</td>
<td>93.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ours fusion Id&amp;Attr</td>
<td>65.0</td>
<td>90.3</td>
<td>95.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.4: Re-identification result on CUHK03 (“detected”).

results on challenging public benchmarks.

8.4 A gated SNN approach

8.4.1 Introduction

In the previous section, we saw one way of introducing prior knowledge into the SNN model, i.e. by pre-training a neural network on labelled data and fusing and fine-tuning the model into a larger neural network that learns the final similarity metric. In this section, I will describe another original approach that we proposed [17], which also uses a supervised pre-trained model on external semantic information but is based on a different neural architecture. In the preceding architecture, two neural networks are pre-trained in a supervised manner on two different labelled datasets (one for identification, one for attributes). In the model that I will present here, there are two neural networks (i.e. two branches) with some common layers in the beginning, and the training is done simultaneously with a loss function integrating the two different objectives; a so-called multi-task learning. Moreover, one branch acts as a gate to “steer” which part of the other branch should be activated.

In our re-identification application, one branch is a CNN pre-trained for person identification, and the other branch, the gating branch, is pre-trained for person body orientation estimation. The whole combined neural network model is then fine-tuned for person re-identification. In the following, we will first described the related work and then explain our approach, called Orientation-Specific CNN (OSCNN), in more detail.
8.4.2 State of the art

Most existing methods for person re-identification focus on developing a robust representation to handle the variations of view. Some methods take into account the view as extra information. For example, Ma et al. [266] divide the data according to the additional camera position information and learn a specific distance metric for each camera pair. Lisanti et al. [252] proposed to apply Kernel Canonical Correlation Analysis which finds a common subspace between the feature space from disjoint cameras. Yi et al. [420] proposed to apply a Siamese CNN to person re-identification. Similar to [252], the weights of two subnetworks are not shared to learn a camera view projection to a common feature space. In these approaches, camera information is used but the body orientation which is only partly due to different camera views is not modelled.

That is, in the same camera view, pedestrians can exhibit different orientations and thus largely different appearances in the resulting images.

In order to solve this issue, Bak et al. [78] perform an orientation-driven feature weighting and the body orientation is calculated according to the walking trajectory. Some other approaches [330, 378] deal with the orientation variations of pedestrian images by using Mixture of Experts. The expert neural networks map the input to the output, while a gating network produces a probability distribution over all experts’ final predictions. Verma et al. [378] applied an orientation-based mixture of experts to the pedestrian detection problem. Sarfraz et al. [330] proposed to learn the orientation sensitive units in a deep neural network to perform attribute recognition. Garcia et al. [157] used orientations estimated by a Kalman filter and then trained two SVM classifiers for pedestrian images matching with respectively similar orientations and dissimilar orientations. And the approach of Li et al. [245] learns a mixture of experts, where samples were softly distributed into different experts via a gating function according to the viewpoint similarity.

Sharing the idea of mixture of experts, we proposed to build a multi-domain representation in different orientations with deep CNNs. Intuitively, an orientation-specific model should have a better generalisation ability than a camera view-specific model, since we cannot incorporate all possible surveillance camera views. Further, instead of using discrete orientations for the gating activation function, in our method, we use a regression model to estimate an accurate and continuous body orientation. This allows to continuously weight different expert models for re-identification and also avoids combining contradictory orientations at the same time.

8.4.3 Body orientation-assisted person re-identification

8.4.3.1 Model architecture

The overall procedure of our re-identification approach OSCNN is shown in Fig. 8.7. The network contains an orientation gating branch and a re-identification branch consisting of 4 feature embeddings regarding the 4 main orientations: left, right, frontal and back. The final output feature representation is a linear combination of the four expert outputs and is steered by an orientation gate unit which is a function of the estimated orientation.

The proposed neural network architecture consists of two convolution layers shared between the two branches. In the re-identification branch, there are 3 further convolution layers followed by 4 separate, parallel fully-connected layers (left,right,front,back) of 512 dimensions, each one corresponding to a local expert. Thus, our network learns different projections from different orientation domains to a common feature space.

In the orientation regression branch, 2 convolution layers and 2 fully connected layers are connected to the common convolutional layers. The estimated orientation output by the ori-
8.4. A gated SNN approach

Figure 8.7: Overview of the OSCNN architecture.

The orientation gating branch is represented by a two-dimensional Cartesian vector \([α, β]\) constructed by projecting the orientation angle on the left-right axis \((x)\) and on the front-back \((y)\) axis and then normalising it to a unit vector. Based on this vector, the orientation gate selects and weights either the left or the right component and either the front or the back component of the re-identification branch. Let \(f_{\{\text{left, right, front, back}\}}\) be the output feature vectors of the 4 different orientation branches. The final re-identification output vector is the sum of the left-right component and the front-back component:

\[
f_{\text{output}} = \max(α, 0)f_{\text{left}} + \max(-α, 0)f_{\text{right}} + \max(β, 0)f_{\text{front}} + \max(-β, 0)f_{\text{back}}
\]

Different from the classic mixture of experts approach, our orientation gate is set before the local experts, and we perform a regression instead of a classification. The advantage of our orientation gate is that it avoids combining contradictory orientations like front and back. Computationally, only two among four orientations are used and combined according to the sign of \(α\) and \(β\). This further allows saving computation.

8.4.3.2 Training

There are two stages to train the model, explained in the following.

Multi-task network pre-training

In the first stage, the orientation regressor and a general re-identification feature embedding are both trained in parallel with two separate objective functions.

We start training the network with pedestrian identity labels and orientation labels respectively. The identification branch is trained as in our attribute-assisted model in section 8.3.4, i.e. using the cross-entropy loss \(E_{\text{identification}}\) (Eq. 8.3) on the softmax output and identity-labelled person images.

For the body orientation, we use the Euclidean loss to train the orientation regression of \(α\) and \(β\). For a given training example, we have:

\[
E_{\text{orientation}} = \frac{(α - \hat{α})^2 + (β - \hat{β})^2}{2}
\]
Chapter 8. Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Methods</th>
<th>R1</th>
<th>R5</th>
<th>R10</th>
<th>R20</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Baseline (CUHK01)</td>
<td>76.6</td>
<td>93.8</td>
<td>97.0</td>
<td>98.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OSCNN (CUHK01)</td>
<td>78.2</td>
<td>94.1</td>
<td>97.3</td>
<td>99.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OSCNN (CUHK01+03)</td>
<td>83.5</td>
<td>96.4</td>
<td>99.0</td>
<td>99.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOMO+XQDA [250]</td>
<td>63.2</td>
<td>83.9</td>
<td>90.1</td>
<td>94.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ImprovedDL [61]</td>
<td>65.0</td>
<td>88.7</td>
<td>93.1</td>
<td>97.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deep Embedding [338]</td>
<td>69.4</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Norm X-Corr [357]</td>
<td>81.2</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>97.3</td>
<td>98.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Multi-task [114]</td>
<td>78.5</td>
<td><strong>96.5</strong></td>
<td>97.5</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.5: Experimental evaluation of OSCNN on the CUHK01 dataset.

where \( \hat{\alpha}, \hat{\beta} \) are predicted orientation labels of the example. Orientation has been annotated with 8 discrete labels.

For datasets that have both identity and orientation labels, we train the network with a combined loss \( E_{\text{multi-task}} = E_{\text{identification}} + \lambda E_{\text{orientation}} \). Then, orientation and identification are learned jointly. Otherwise, the two branches are trained separately.

**Orientation-specific fine-tuning with triplets**

In the second training stage, we fine-tune the network parameters using similarity metric learning in order to specialise the 4 different local experts. For the re-identification branch, we remove the last fully-connected layer and duplicate four times the first fully-connected layer. Different choices and weightings are performed according to the orientation of the person in the input image estimated by the orientation branch. Thus, the four orientation-specific layers are updated in different ways, whereas the other layers keep their pre-trained weights. For the similarity metric learning, we use the improved triplet loss with hard examples (c.f. Eq. 8.6) as for our attribute-based SNN.

### 8.4.4 Experiments

For the evaluation of our approach, we used the datasets Market-1501 [440] (32,668 images of 1501 different persons), Market-1203 [267] (a subset of Market-1501 with annotated body orientations) and CUHK01 [246] (3884 images, 971 persons). The evaluation measures are the rank 1 accuracy (R1), the mean average precision (mAP) and the Cumulative Match Curve (CMC) (c.f. section 8.2.4).

We compared our OSCNN to the state-of-the-art approaches on Market-1501 and CUHK01. Following the test protocol in [61, 114], we added also the CUHK03 images to the training for the test on the CUHK01 and we compared to the methods only using these two datasets for training. As Table 8.5 shows, our method is superior to most results of the state of the art. Even without much extra CUHK03 training data, our method shows a competitive performance. The baseline model is not using body orientation and shows inferior performance, clearly demonstrating the benefit of the orientation regression and local expert training via the gated SNN architecture.

On the Market-1501 dataset, our OSCNN outperforms most state-of-the-art methods. The advantage of our approach is that the model does not need a pre-training step with a much larger pre-training dataset composed of ImageNet as [239, 361, 445, 447]. And our model has a much lower complexity (1.15 × 10^8 FLOPs of our model compared to 1.45 × 10^9 FLOPs of JLML and to 3.8 × 10^9 FLOPs of SVDNet). Recently some state-of-the-art approaches...
employ re-ranking [427, 447] which uses information from nearest neighbours in the gallery and significantly improves the performance. As Table 8.6 shows, our approach can largely benefit from this technique and achieves a state-of-the-art result on Market-1501.

**8.4.5 Conclusion**

In this section, we presented a novel approach to tightly integrate labelled information (body orientation and person identity) via supervised learning into a multi-task CNN framework, and a method to dynamically activate certain parts of the structure via a learnt gating mechanism. By fine-tuning this pre-trained model in a weakly supervised similarity metric learning approach, i.e., a triplet SNN, we were able to achieve excellent results on the task of person re-identification on several challenging public benchmarks.

In the next section, I will present a final approach for including additional semantic information in the similarity learning for person re-identification: the appearance of the group of persons surrounding the one to re-identify.

**8.5 Using group context**

**8.5.1 Introduction**

The two previous contributions consisted in integrating more semantic external information (prior knowledge) into the similarity metric learning: pedestrian attributes and body orientation, and this significantly improved the re-identification performance. Thus, we can assume that the learnt metric better reflects real semantic similarities. However, in a realistic setting, there are still frequent cases, where the images of two different persons are extremely similar and where even humans have difficulties to tell if they belong to the same person or not. Attributes and body orientation might not help always, as in public spaces there are often common paths that people take; thus there are only a few different walking directions and thus body orientations. Also attributes may not discriminate sufficiently, as people tend to wear similar clothes (e.g., a suit) and may have similar hair styles (e.g., short brown hair).

To address this problem, our idea was to use context information about the surrounding group of persons [16] (see Fig. 8.8). In realistic settings, people often walk in groups rather than

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Methods</th>
<th>R1</th>
<th>mAP</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Baseline</td>
<td>77.3</td>
<td>53.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OSCNN</td>
<td>78.9</td>
<td>55.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OSCNN+re-rank</td>
<td>83.9</td>
<td>73.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOMO+XQDA [250]</td>
<td>43.8</td>
<td>22.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gated SCNN [117]</td>
<td>65.9</td>
<td>39.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Divide fuses re-rank [427]</td>
<td>82.3</td>
<td>72.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSRO [445]</td>
<td>78.1</td>
<td>56.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DeepContext [239]</td>
<td>80.3</td>
<td>57.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K-reciprocal re-rank [447]</td>
<td>77.1</td>
<td>63.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SVDnet [361]</td>
<td>82.3</td>
<td>62.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JLML [248]</td>
<td>85.1</td>
<td>65.5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.6: Experimental evaluation of OSCNN on the Market-1501 dataset.
alone. Thus, the appearance of these groups can serve as visual context and help to determine whether two images of persons with similar clothing belong to the same individual. However, matching the surrounding people in a group in different views is also challenging. On the one hand, it undergoes the same variations as for a single person’s appearance. On the other hand, the number of persons and their relative position within the group can vary over time and across cameras. Further, partial occlusions among individuals are very likely in groups.

Our approach [16] was to train a deep CNN for single-person re-identification and use it to additionally extract group features via a specific pooling operation. Finally, we defined a combined similarity measure using group and individual representations.

8.5.2 State of the art

In the literature, there are several group association (or group re-identification) approaches. Zheng et al. [442] extracted visual words which are the clusters of SIFT+RGB features in a group image. Then they built two descriptors that describe the ratio information of visual words between local regions to represent group information. Cai et al. [103] used covariance descriptors to encode group context information. And Lisanti et al. [253] proposed to learn a dictionary of sparse atoms using patches extracted from single person images. Then the learned dictionary is exploited to obtain a sparsity-driven residual group representation. These approaches can be severely affected by background clutter, and thus a preprocessing stage is necessary, e.g. a background subtraction.

Some other approaches use trajectory features to describe group information. Wei et al. [395], for example, presented a group extraction approach by clustering the persons’ trajectories observed in a camera view. They introduced person-group features composed of two parts: SADALF features [144], extracted after background subtraction and representing the visual appearance of the accompanying persons of a given individual, and a signature encoding the position of the subject within the group. Similarly, Ukita et al. [372] determined for each pair of
pedestrians whether they form a group or not, using spatio-temporal features of their trajectories like relative position, speed and direction. Then, the group features composed of the trajectory features (position, speed, direction) of individuals in each group, the number of persons as well as the mean colour histograms of the individual person images. However, when people walk in a group, the position and speed are not always uniform. Thus, the trajectory-based features may not be precise and change significantly over time.

Unlike these methods, the advantage of our approach is that there is no need for a pre-processing stage of person detection or background subtraction. Our model is pre-trained on single-person re-identification data to learn the discriminative features that distinguish identities in images. Using a global max-pooling operation, the proposed model is, by design, invariant to displacements of individuals within a group. Moreover, the deep neural network that we employed can provide a richer feature representation to describe groups than the colour and texture features used by existing methods.

8.5.3 Proposed group context approach

In the first step, we trained a CNN for classification of persons on a given training dataset using a supervised approach by minimising the softmax cross-entropy loss as in sections 8.3.4 and 8.4.3 (c.f. Eq. 8.3). We tested a deep CNN architecture of 9 alternating convolution and max-pooling layers followed by 2 fully-connected layers, as well as a pre-trained Resnet-50 [178] that is fine-tuned. After training the model, in order to compute a distance between a query image and a gallery image, a Siamese architecture is build, where each branch (query and gallery) contains two parts: one for a single-person image and the other for an image with the surrounding context (showing a group of persons). Figure 8.9 illustrates this. The region corresponding to the queried individual in the group image is covered (with the mean colour) in order to remove the redundancy.

For the single-person branch, we discarded the last fully-connected layer and used the intermediate fully-connected layer as an embedding to compute a single-person distance. Note that here we did not perform an additional similarity metric fine-tuning as in the previous approaches. This might further improve the results, but would have been considerably longer to train and was not necessary to demonstrate the contribution of group context. For the group branch, the last two fully-connected layers are discarded and larger group images are given as input. A Global Max-Pooling (GMP) operation on all spatial locations of the resulting feature map from the last convolution layer is applied leading to a $K$-dimensional vector, with $K$ being the number of feature maps. As illustrated in Fig. 8.9, for a given set of query and candidate person and group images, $P_i, G_i$ and $P_j, G_j$ respectively, we obtain 4 feature vectors: $F(C(P_i)), GMP(C(G_i)), F(C(P_j))$, and $GMP(C(G_j))$, where $C(I)$ is the output of the last convolution layer for image $I$, $F(\cdot)$ represents the operation of the first fully-connected layer, and $GMP(\cdot)$ the Global Max-Pooling operation. Then, the single-person and group distances between two images are defined as:

$$D_{id}(P_i, P_j) = 1 - \cos(F(C(P_i)), F(C(P_j))) \quad \text{and}$$

$$D_{gr}(G_i, G_j) = 1 - \cos(GMP(C(G_i)), GMP(C(G_j))) . \quad (8.10)$$

The final distance measure is simply the sum of these two distances:

$$D(I_i, I_j) = D_{id}(P_i, P_j) + D_{gr}(G_i, G_j) , \quad (8.11)$$

119
which can be used for ranking and for re-identification based on the first ranked result with respect to a given query image.

8.5.4 Experiments

For evaluation our approach, we used the OGRE dataset [253], which contains 1,279 images of 39 groups acquired by three disjoint cameras pointing at a parking lot. This is a challenging dataset with many different viewpoints and self-occlusions. We manually annotated a subset of this dataset with 450 bounding boxes and 75 identities.

To show that our approach can be applied with different CNN architectures, we used Resnet-50, pre-trained on ImageNet, and also our own CNN architecture (similar to the ones of the previous sections and denoted as Convnet-5 here) composed of 9 alternating convolution and max-pooling layers and 2 fully-connected layers.

The CMC scores (c.f. section 8.2.4) for person re-identification are shown in Table 8.7. We compared the person re-identification results with some variants of our method. “Sum feature” and “Concatenate feature” represent variants that first sum or concatenate the single-person feature representation and the group feature representation and then compute the distance measure on these vectors. We tested also a variant that retains the query or candidate person image in the group image without covering the corresponding region with the mean colour.

The results in Table 8.7 show that the proposed method (i.e. covering the person in the group image and summing the person and group distance) achieved the best re-identification
8.6 Listwise similarity metric learning and ranking

| Variant                  | Resnet-50 |                  | | Convnet-5 |                  |
|--------------------------|-----------|------------------|-----------|-----------|
|                          | Rank 1    | Rank 5           | Rank 10   | Rank 1    | Rank 5           | Rank 10   |
| Single person only       | 47.2      | 69.3             | 78.8      | 51.6      | 70.4             | 77.9      |
| Group context only       | 26.2      | 57.2             | 66.3      | 12.7      | 42.3             | 53.0      |
| Sum features             | 41.1      | 69.9             | 77.7      | 16.3      | 50.3             | 61.7      |
| Concatenate features     | 51.9      | **75.1**         | 81.1      | 16.4      | 52.6             | 61.9      |
| Dist sum w/o img cover   | 54.1      | 73.7             | 80.8      | 52.2      | **70.6**         | 78.1      |
| Dist sum w/ img cover    | **56.8**  | 73.7             | **81.7**  | **53.7**  | 70.4             | **78.6**  |

Table 8.7: Person re-identification accuracy (CMC scores in %) on the OGRE dataset.

results with both tested CNN models. Overall, our proposed method based on Resnet-50 and Convnet-5 increased the result by 9.6% points and 2.1% points respectively compared to the approach only using single-person images. These results clearly demonstrate that group context has the ability to considerably reduce the appearance ambiguity and improve the person re-identification performance. An advantage of our method is that it can be easily applied to any CNN-based single person re-identification model without any further training.

8.5.5 Conclusion

In this section, we presented our last approach for integrating prior semantic information into the similarity metric. We used the context in the image to gather additional descriptions on the surrounding objects, i.e., accompanying persons in this case. The proposed method has the advantage that no additional training is required to create a model for the context. However, it assumes that the context is composed of the same category of objects (i.e., persons). It would be interesting to see how a model specifically trained for other types of “accompanying” objects, e.g., suitcases, trolleys, animals, could improve on the re-identification performance, assuming that this context does not change significantly over time and across different cameras.

8.6 Listwise similarity metric learning and ranking

8.6.1 Introduction

In this final section, we come back to a more fundamental study on the underlying similarity metric learning algorithm for SNNs applied to person re-identification [18]. In particular, we conceived an new objective function and metric learning approach that indirectly optimises the final re-identification evaluation measures, based on the ranking of examples with respect to a query.

In contrast to our previous contributions on tuple-based and polar sine-based functions, where dissimilar pairs a simultaneously “pushed away” in the projection space, here, we explicitly consider the ranking, i.e., the order, of a set of candidate samples (positive and negative) w.r.t. to a given query. This is similar to our min-triplet loss (Eq. 8.6) in section 8.3, but incorporates more information about mis-ranked examples and their relation to correct matches.
8.6.2 State of the art

We already discussed the state of the art in similarity metric learning and SNN in section 7.2, and we will concentrate on approaches for ranking. In particular, we are interested here in one category of methods which is called learning-to-rank. This approach, widely applied in information retrieval and natural language processing, consists in learning a model that can compute the optimal ordering of a list of items. Many learning-to-rank methods have been proposed in the literature, like the pairwise approaches RankSVM [183], RankNet [100] and listwise approaches ListNet [107], ListMLE [406] and LambdaRank [101], which take an entire ranked list of objects as the learning instance.

Person re-identification could be considered as a retrieval problem based on ranking, where the matching images, i.e. the ones showing the same person as in the query image, should be ranked before all the others. Some methods proposed in the literature follow this approach. For example, in the work of Prosser et al. [313] a set of weak RankSVMs is learnt, each computed on a small set of data, and then combined to build a stronger ranker using ensemble learning. Wang et al. [389] applied the ListMLE method to person re-identification: their approach maps a list of similarity scores to a probability distribution, then utilizes the negative log likelihood of ground truth permutations as the loss function.

8.6.3 Learning to rank with SNNs

The principal problem with rank learning with statistical machine learning approaches, particularly neural networks, is that the rank is discrete, and, thus, rank errors are not differentiable. In order to apply an iterative gradient descent optimisation, the RankNet approach from Burges et al. [100] uses a sigmoid function (which is convex and derivable) and pairwise relationships to model the ranking. Later, they proposed the LambdaRank method [101], where the gradient is scaled by the improvement of a global ranking measure (the Normalized Discounted Cumulative Gain (NDCG)) incurred by swapping two examples in the ranking.

Our proposed approach is based on this approach. However, we do not use the pairwise cross-entropy loss function but the triplet loss (c.f. Eq. 7.7 in section 7.2.3). Also, we combine two ranking measures, the rank-1 (R1) score and the Average Precision (AP), i.e. the area under the precision-recall curve, for a given query and ranking. Finally, we propose to minimise our modified triplet loss function, called Rank-Triplet, on batches of examples (i.e. lists), where, in each batch, only the most relevant triplets are selected for updating the model parameters, i.e. we use only mis-ranked examples.

More precisely, a training batch is formed by $M$ images of $N$ identities. We take one example in the batch as query and perform a ranking among the rest of images in the batch. (For the sake of a robust metric, we add a margin $m$ to the distance of ranking positions between the true correspondences and the probe before ranking.) The AP and R1 scores are computed for each of those query rankings. Then, with respect to one given query, we form all possible mis-ranked pairs (false correspondences ranked before the true correspondence), and we re-calculate the new AP and R1 scores by swapping positions of the pair in the ranking and thus obtain the gains $\Delta AP$ and $\Delta R1$, respectively. The loss of each triplet is weighted by the sum of these gains. The
8.6. Listwise similarity metric learning and ranking

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Loss function</th>
<th>R1</th>
<th>mAP</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Classification loss</td>
<td>74.3</td>
<td>51.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siamese loss</td>
<td>62.9</td>
<td>46.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Triplet loss</td>
<td>74.3</td>
<td>56.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quadruplet loss</td>
<td>74.9</td>
<td>58.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hardbatch</td>
<td>81.0</td>
<td>63.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baseline</td>
<td>82.1</td>
<td>66.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ours (Rank-triplet)</td>
<td>83.6</td>
<td>67.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.8: Re-identification results (in %) on Market-1501 with different loss functions.

The final Rank-triplet loss is calculated as follows:

\[
E_{\text{rank-triplet}} = \frac{1}{MN} \sum_{i=1}^{MN} \sum_{j \in TC_i} \sum_{k \in FC_i} \sum_{r'_{ij} < r_{ij}} \left[ \|f(x_i) - f(x_j)\|_2^2 \right.
\]

\[
- \|f(x_i) - f(x_k)\|_2^2 + m \right] \cdot \left( \Delta AP_{jk} + \Delta R1_{jk} \right),
\] (8.12)

where \( x_i \) is the \( i \)th training example in a training batch, \( K_i \) is the number of mis-ranked pairs w.r.t. the \( i \)th example as query, and \( r'_{ij} \) is the rank of the \( j \)th example w.r.t. the \( i \)th image as query. \( TC_i/FC_i \) is the true/false correspondence set of the \( i \)th example. \( \Delta AP_{jk} \) is the gain of AP by swapping the \( j \)th and \( k \)th examples w.r.t. the \( i \)th example as query and analogously for R1.

With our evaluation based weighting, we make a trade-off between the moderate hard examples and hardest examples, i.e. more weight is given to the hardest examples to make the learning efficient, and, at the same time, the less hard examples are used to stabilise the training.

8.6.4 Experiments

I will present here a summary of the results of our experiments on the person re-identification problem with a Resnet-50 neural network architecture pre-trained on Imagenet and with different loss functions. More detailed experiments with different neural architectures and on an image retrieval task can be found in [116].

First, we evaluated the re-identification performance of our Rank-Triplet approach on the Market-1501 dataset and compared it with several other common loss functions. The results are shown in Table 8.8. For the supervised classification with identity labels, the softmax cross entropy loss is used. The margin in the Siamese loss and triplet loss is fixed to the default value \( m = 1 \). For the pairwise Siamese learning the contrastive loss is used (c.f. Eq. 7.6), and we generated all possible pairs of images within a batch. The triplet loss is calculated according to Eq. 7.7. And the hard batch triplet loss takes only the hardest positive image and negative image, the hard batch triplet loss is calculated as follows.

\[
L_{\text{hard-batch}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \max_{j \in TC_i} \|f(x_i) - f(x_j)\|_2^2 - \min_{k \in FC_i} \|f(x_i) - f(x_k)\|_2^2 + m, 0), \] (8.13)

where \( N \) is the number of triplets, \( TC_i/FC_i \) is the true/false correspondence set of the \( i \)th example.
Chapter 8. Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Methods</th>
<th>Market-1501</th>
<th>DukeMTMC-Reid</th>
<th>CUHK03-NP</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>R1</td>
<td>mAP</td>
<td>R1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hardbatch triplet loss [184]</td>
<td>81.0</td>
<td>63.9</td>
<td>62.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Our baseline</td>
<td>82.1</td>
<td>66.5</td>
<td>72.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Our Rank-Triplet loss</td>
<td>83.6</td>
<td>67.3</td>
<td>74.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rank-Triplet+re-rank [447]</td>
<td>86.2</td>
<td>79.8</td>
<td>78.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOMO+XQDA [250]</td>
<td>43.8</td>
<td>22.2</td>
<td>30.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSRO [445]</td>
<td>78.1</td>
<td>56.2</td>
<td>67.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Divide and fuse [427]</td>
<td>82.3</td>
<td>72.4</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K-reciprocal re-rank [447]</td>
<td>77.1</td>
<td>63.6</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACRN[333]</td>
<td>83.6</td>
<td>62.6</td>
<td>72.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SVDNet [361]</td>
<td>82.3</td>
<td>62.1</td>
<td>76.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JML [248]</td>
<td>85.1</td>
<td>65.5</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DPFL [115]</td>
<td><strong>88.6</strong></td>
<td>72.6</td>
<td><strong>79.2</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.9: Comparison of our Rank-Triplet approach with state-of-the-art methods for person re-identification.

The quadruplet loss in [113], based on triplets, pushes away also negative pairs from positive pairs w.r.t. different probe images. The loss is formulated as:

$$E_{\text{quadruplet}} = -\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \max \left( \| f(x_i) - f(x_j) \|_2^2 - \| f(x_i) - f(x_k) \|_2^2 + m_1, 0 \right)$$

$$+ \max \left( \| f(x_i) - f(x_j) \|_2^2 - \| f(x_k) - f(x_l) \|_2^2 + m_2, 0 \right), \quad (8.14)$$

where $x_j$ is the feature embeddings of an image from the same identity as $x_i$ and $x_k, x_l$ are from different identities. As [113], we set the $m_1 = 1, m_2 = 0.5$.

Finally, we implemented a baseline which is based on the Rank-triplet loss function without the term for evaluation gain weighting. But the triplet selection is still based on the batch ranking orders.

Our Rank-triplet achieved the best performance among these loss functions. This comparison shows the effectiveness of the listwise evaluation measure-based weighting. Rank-triplet gives also better results than hardbatch. This shows that using moderate difficult examples and weighting them helps the metric learning. Using the quadruplet loss also slightly improves the performance with respect to triplets. This could eventually be combined with our loss.

We also compared our method with state-of-the-art methods on three benchmark datasets: Market-1501, DukeMTMC-Reid and CUHK03-NP. The results are shown in Table 8.9. Our method Rank-triplet achieves better results than most of the other methods. Only on Market-1501, DPFL obtains a slightly better result, and SVDNet and DPFL on DukeMTMC-Reid. On the CUHK03 benchmark, our methods achieves the best results. DPFL and SVDNet are based on a classification loss, and the CUHK03 dataset contains probably too few images per person to train a good classifier. However, the triplet loss is not much affected because a large number of triplets can still be formed. Since the main contribution of these two state-of-the-art methods focuses on the network architecture, these methods can potentially be combined with our loss function.
8.6.5 Conclusion

In this section, we presented a final contribution on improving similarity metric learning with SNN-based models. This approach not only uses lists (or tuples) to improve the convergence and final similarity metric, and thus the overall re-identification performance, but also directly incorporates in the optimisation the order of the ranking of lists of examples (operating iteratively on random batches). Our experimental results showed that this is a very powerful method for similarity metric learning on image-based recognition problems, like person re-identification and image retrieval with challenging and realistic state-of-the-art datasets.

8.7 Conclusion

In summary, we presented four different approaches to improve similarity metric learning with SNNs illustrated on the (single-shot) person re-identification problem. We showed how semantic prior knowledge can be effectively incorporated in these neural network-based architectures, for example semantic pedestrian attributes and body orientation. Further, we presented an elegant approach to make use of scene context, i.e. surrounding persons, for re-identifying a given person, which can be applied to any CNN-based person re-identification model without any further retraining and fine-tuning. Finally, we introduced an original objective function for a new learning-to-rank approach with SNNs giving state-of-the-art results.

Most of these contributions could be combined to probably further improve the results on person re-identification. Also, applying some of these methods to the face and gesture verification and classification problems of the previous chapter would be very interesting and give insights into the general performance of the different approaches. Despite the large progress that has been recently made on the person re-identification problem, there still remain some open issues that make their application to real-world settings difficult. For example, the overall generalisation capacity of deep neural network models has been little studied in this context, because evaluation is usually conducted on a given test dataset that is similar to the training dataset in terms of acquisition conditions. In real-world applications, methods that are performing well on any type of realistic data are required, i.e. different viewing angles, resolution, lighting conditions, possibly by new mechanisms that automatically adapt to new previously unseen environments (domain adaptation, unsupervised and continuous learning etc.). Further, the automatic optimal fusion of different cues would allow for more robust systems, e.g. the context of carried objects and accompanying persons, the person’s gait, walking speed, characteristic motion as well as scene information from several cameras, for example.

We will elaborate more on future research directions in the following section.
Chapter 8. Deep similarity metric learning and ranking for person re-identification


9 Conclusion and perspectives

In the preceding chapters, I described a large part of our research work that I co-supervised and that I was involved in during the last 10 years. I had the chance the work in several European countries with extremely competent persons and on a variety of related topics, which, on the one hand, gave me a solid technical and scientific background, and on the other hand, broadened and enriched my culture, vision and thinking in various aspects.

Of course, this is not an exhaustive report of all the work that I have been involved in. Only the most representative results are presented, and I have not mentioned some of the more recent studies. For example, our work on weakly supervised and unsupervised learning techniques for object recognition and tracking, performed in a lab-internal project across several teams and with two Master students. And also, our work on neural network compression and approximation conducted within the context of an international collaboration with a colleague from the Federal Pernambuco University, Recife, Brazil. I will briefly describe these in the perspectives, as both of the studies are being pursued, or will be, with PhD theses starting in 2018 and 2019.

But before outlining future research directions and projects, I will first summarise the research work that I presented in this manuscript and draw some general conclusions.

9.1 Summary of research work and general conclusion

Although there is some overlap, I categorised the description of our past research into two parts, mainly due to the context of the two different research institutes and environments I have been working in: Idiap and LIRIS. The first part described our machine learning and computer vision approaches for visual object tracking in challenging dynamic environments, and the second outlined our contributions on weakly-supervised metric learning methods using Siamese Neural Networks.

From a computer vision point of view, we first focused on on-line multiple object tracking in videos from a single RGB camera, and in particular, multiple face tracking applications in dynamic contexts, and we addressed a variety of common problems, such as data association, the tracking of a variable number of objects, an efficient inference for real-time applications, the integration and adaptation of robust appearance models.

In particular, in chapter 5, we proposed an effective on-line algorithm for multi-face tracking that is able to cope with missing face detections over longer periods of time without losing the object, as well as frequent false detections without falsely initialising new tracks. Then, we extended this work by an additional algorithm that estimates the Visual Focus of Attention of a tracked person. The proposed unsupervised on-line learning approach learns a robust model from very few examples of face images acquired during the tracking.

In chapter 6, we limited ourselves on tracking a single object in a video and focused on creating more robust appearance models and on-line learning approaches. This included three
major contributions: one method particularly suited to tracking deformable objects in challenging videos without any prior knowledge, another method including motion context in the on-line learning of a robust discriminative appearance model and the last contribution resulting from the PhD work with Salma Moujtahid [?] proposing a method that effectively and dynamically incorporates the scene context in the tracking process by selecting tracking algorithms specialised for a given environment and context.

In the second part, in chapter 7, I presented our work with Lilei Zheng [441] and Samuel Berlemont [90] on Siamese Neural Networks for similarity metric learning, applied to pairwise face verification as well as gesture and action classification. Through more balanced and better conditioned objective functions and learning algorithms, our proposed approaches were able to address several problems, such as the better rejection of unknown classes and a higher classification and verification performance.

In the final chapter, in the context of the PhD thesis of Yiqiang Chen [116], we studied non-linear similarity metric learning approaches employing more complex SNN models based on deeper CNN architectures. Our work focused here on the application of person re-identification in images coming from several cameras with non-overlapping views. We showed that the use of pedestrian attributes in the learnt similarity metric, and different models that are specific to different body orientations as well as person group context largely improves the re-identification performance.

From a machine learning point of view, in the presented work in the first part, one can notice a trend from off-line learnt models (e.g. for track creation and removal) to more on-line learning (e.g. for the objects’ appearance). There is a natural need for such algorithms in on-line visual tracking approaches, and on-line data processing methods in general. However, there is a considerable risk of model drift because very few training data is usually available, and the model needs to be adapted continuously to changes of the object or environment without “forgetting” previously acquired relevant information (the “stability-plasticity” dilemma). To address this problem, we first proposed an effective on-line learnt model for pixel-wise detection and segmentation and a co-training framework, where the estimation of one model (detector) is used to update the model of the other one (segmentation) (and vice versa). And in the work on scene context, this idea is extended to several models, where only the selected model updates all the other ones at each point in time. Nevertheless, more principled methods for on-line learning (with neural networks) and the better integration and understanding of contextual information are still needed.

Another trend of the presented work is from supervised learning used for MOT, to algorithms that are only weakly supervised, which we have employed for the similarity metric learning with SNNs. We have presented several new objective functions (tuple-based, polar sine-based, Rank-triplet etc.) and example selection strategies that improved the training and the performance of SNNs for various different applications. We further introduced original neural architectures and training strategies that allowed us to introduce semantic external knowledge. In this way, we were able to combine different models that have been trained in a supervised and weakly supervised way, according to the quantity of data as well as the quantity and type of annotation that is available.

To summarise, we made several significant contributions in visual object tracking to improve the long-term performance and to improve the robustness of the visual appearance models and on-line learning. Nevertheless, many challenges still remain. Several recent tracking methods are based on deep CNNs and showed excellent performance on public benchmarks. However, there are two major issues to be considered. First, these models cannot be created from very few training data as in short video sequences. Thus, they need to be pre-trained on large datasets
9.2. Perspectives

such as ImageNet and “fine-tuned” on-line on a given test video. This pre-training introduces a large bias on the type of videos and the type of objects to be tracked. Also, the on-line learning or fine-tuning of neural networks with such non-stationary data is a topic that has not been studied much in machine learning. We will come back to this issue in the perspectives. The second issue is the computational complexity of deep CNNs. Apparently, such models can operate in real-time with recent GPUs. But, the memory requirements and especially the power consumption make their usage mostly impossible or at least impractical for smaller-scale hardware, such as embedded systems. We will also come back to this in the perspectives.

Concerning similarity metric learning, we made several important contributions to improve their convergence and performance of SNNs for verification, classification and ranking, both on the theoretical and practical side. With the current revival and exaltation for neural networks, there has been some recent work and advances on metric learning with deep neural networks and deep CNN (as ours in chapter 8). However, as some of these models are very complex and require a significant amount of training data, some fundamental questions arise. For example, how generic is the learnt similarity metric, i.e. how does it cope with unseen data? According to some of our experiments with large amounts of training data, the difference in classification performance between a supervised and a weakly supervised model seems to decrease. This may suggest that the learnt metric just “compares” the given test data to the learnt examples by computing a type of non-linear distance, which might give very poor results when the test data distribution is too far from the training data. We will further investigate these phenomena in our future work. In any case, the inclusion of prior knowledge into the metric learning showed to be a very effective approach. We showed that external semantic information improves the overall performance, but as labels may not be available abundantly it would also be interesting, in the future, to investigate how unsupervised learning may help the metric learning. This may also be used to better define or learn the somewhat vague notions of “similarity” and “dissimilarity” imposed by traditional SNN approaches.

9.2 Perspectives

There are numerous perspectives and possible future directions for our research, and, in the following, I will present the most important ones. My colleagues and I have the chance to have obtained the funding for several PhD students that will start soon or have started recently and that will give us the opportunity to do research on these topics. I will co-supervise them with my colleagues from LIRIS and other laboratories, which will further allow me to strengthen existing collaborations within and between different teams (“Imagine”, “Data Mining and Machine Learning” (DM2L) and “Multi-Agent Systems” (SMA)) and start new collaborations with others (Laboratoire Hubert Curien (LHC), Saint Étienne, ENS Lyon, UCLy). This evolution in terms of funding and new supervision activities as well as the identified new research directions outlined in the following give me a strong motivation for my habilitation and to build up my own research group.

More specifically, the following topics will be the focus of my research for the next 4–6 years.

9.2.1 On-line and sequential similarity metric learning

In 2018, Christophe Garcia and I continued our collaboration with Grégoire Lefebvre at Orange Labs, Grenoble, related to the work that has been carried out during the PhD thesis of Samuel Berlemont (c.f. chapter 7). Within the context of a newly funded PhD, being performed by Paul Compagnon, we will explore and develop new methods and techniques for SNN-based
Chapter 9. Conclusion and perspectives

similarity metric learning of temporal sequences of mobile sensor data. The goal here is to
discover and recognise patterns and routines, for example of elderly persons, using inertial sensor
data, e.g. from a mobile phone, a smart watch etc. To this end, we will study new approaches
based on recurrent SNNs and on unsupervised and weakly supervised learning that will allow to
automatically recognise similar patterns that are recurring and others that are more exceptional
or abnormal in order to detect when there is a degradation in the autonomy or any other problem
related to the health of the person. Very little work has been done so far on such recurrent SNN-
based similarity metric learning approaches to characterise and classify sequential data.

Another work on metric learning on images has started with the PhD that I am co-supervising
with Christophe Garcia and Pierre Letissier from the “Institut National de l’Audiovisuel” (INA)
in Paris. In this upcoming work that will be conducted by Thomas Petit, we will study new
approaches based on deep convolutional SNN for the indexation of videos and broadcasts by
recognising faces in large-scale face image datasets. A part from the large training data volume,
we will focus on two scientific aspects here. First, we will investigate how such a complex SNN
similarity metric can generalise to unseen faces, and how it can effectively and incrementally
learn from sequential streams of (face) data and user annotation. And second, we will seek
to develop new compressed, robust representations of faces (particular embeddings, hash codes
etc.) to allow for an efficient indexation and retrieval of images and videos containing faces or
possibly other specific content.

9.2.2 Autonomous developmental learning for intelligent vision

During the last two years, in a lab-internal project between the teams Imagine (Christophe
Garcia and myself, INSA Lyon) and SMA (Frédéric Armetta, Mathieu Lefort, University Lyon
1), we conducted exploratory research on new approaches for learning visual representation to
recognise and track objects in videos in a completely unsupervised way and with minimum prior
knowledge. Two Master students supported us on this ambitious project, and we were able
to develop some novel ideas and approaches [19] based on developmental and constructivist
learning and SNNs. Figure 9.1 illustrates the principle procedure. Given a video stream, a first
algorithm detects salient image regions in each frame based on low-level visual features (colour,
edges, motion etc.). Then, using temporal consistent pairs of detected image regions, visual
representations of candidate objects are learnt on-line with a Siamese CNN architecture. The
output of the neural network forms an embedding space where similar objects are close and
different objects further apart. After a bootstrapping learning phase, this learnt model can in
turn be used to better detect and recognise the objects in the scene. To improve the embedding
and the convergence, we extended this approach with multi-task learning of image reconstruction
and object segmentation and with an attention mechanism that focuses on different objects in
the scene over time.

Many challenges and open issues remain in this project: for example, how to learn incrementally
and update an optimal representation from a continuous stream of (visual) data without
any prior knowledge, what are the perception, attention and memory mechanisms that allow
for plastic and abstract representations that are efficient for recognising known objects and for
transferring learnt knowledge to unknown environments, and how can higher-level information
be integrated in the model and be used to help this autonomous process, e.g. the scene con-
text, higher-level temporal or causal information, sensori-motor stimuli, affordances etc. These
fundamental issues will be studied in the context of the PhD thesis of Ruiqi Dai, that I will co-
supervise with my colleagues from the SMA team and a researcher in humanities (philosophy),
Matthieu Guillermin from the “Institut Catholique de Lyon”.

130
9.2.3 Neural network model compression

With the advent of General-Purpose GPU computing and large-scale High-Performance Computing (HPC) applied to CNNs, more and more complex, deep neural network models have been developed requiring large amounts of computational and memory resources for training and inference. However, it has been shown that the redundancy in such models is very large, and that they can be reduced in size by several orders of magnitude using specific quantisation, factorisation or pruning techniques without any major negative impact on the overall (classification) performance.

In our recent collaboration with Renato Cintra and André Leite from the Federal Pernambuco University, Recife, Brazil, we proposed an approach that approximates the parameters of a trained neural network with so-called dyadic rationals, i.e. powers of two, and Canonical Signed Digit-coded factors. In this way, we were able to obtain multiplication-free approximations of the models, i.e. requiring only bit shifts and additions, paving the way for very low-complexity hardware implementations of deep neural networks. We showed the effectiveness of our approach [1] on a variety of tasks and network architectures, MLPs and CNNs, including the well-known AlexNet trained on ImageNet [220].

This is an exciting research area that we will continue to explore. It raises also some fundamental questions and issues that we will tackle in the near future. For example, instead of reducing the complexity of already trained neural networks, can we develop an algorithm that directly learns such sparse or simplified models while maintaining the same classification performance? In a PhD thesis starting soon in the context of an ambitious research project called “Academics” between LIRIS, LHC, LIP and the Physics Laboratory of ENS Lyon and funded by
the IDEX Lyon Scientific Breakthrough program, we will investigate new approaches to learn sparse neural networks applied to large-scale problems related to complex dynamical systems (e.g. climate models, social networks). To this end, with my colleagues from the DM2L team, Marc Plantevit and Céline Robardet, we will work on the combination of specific data mining and feature selection methods to reduce the noise and redundancy in the training data as well as in the model. In particular, we will try to identify frequent and typical activation patterns of a trained neural network graph, layer-wise and across several layers, in order to remove (i.e. prune) redundant or useless neurons and to understand the responsibilities of different parts of the model that we will then try to factorise and combine. A preliminary study (Master thesis) on this topic gave promising experimental results.

We will also investigate methods for building simpler and more sparse models directly during training. Recently, approaches that construct neural network architectures that incrementally and iteratively grow (e.g. Neural Architecture Search, Network Morphism) may provide an interesting starting point.

In the PhD thesis of Guillaume Anoufa on far-field object detection and recognition in video streams that will in 2019 and that I will co-supervise with Christophe Garcia and Nicolas Bélanger from Airbus Helicopters, we will also tackle this problem of model simplification and compression with CNNs. We will approach this from the training data side and with semi-supervised learning, i.e. we will create synthetic annotated images for training a classifier. Among other issues, we will investigate how the choice and type of synthetic data influences the performance and capability to automatically build a neural model of reduced size and complexity and increased generalisation capacity.

9.2.4 From deep learning to deep understanding

Exploring and developing new learning strategies and neural network architectures, possibly in a self-organising and autonomous way, may provide numerous further perspectives. First, drastically reducing the computational complexity and memory requirements of deep neural networks will not only allow for an efficient deployment in embedded devices (the Internet of Things) giving them increased AI capabilities but also enable powerful machine learning-based modelling of complex large-scale problems such as climate and weather prediction in physics or brain signal analysis and interpretation in Neuroscience.

Another issue that gains increasing interest in the AI and Machine Learning research communities is the fact that trained deep neural network models and their inference are difficult to interpret and explain for humans, which leads to an increasing interest in “Explainable AI” approaches. Much work is still to be done to introduce this “explainability” and “interpretability” into neural network-based models, and this will be one perspective of our future work on model simplification and sparsity. That is, we will seek to learn models that favour the identification and isolation of processing paths or sub-models allowing to more easily incorporate and learn semantic knowledge, probably of symbolic nature. This may also raise and hopefully answer some questions on causality. The goal here is formally and statistically analyse input-output correlations at different levels of the trained model, and, further, to develop new training strategies that specifically create such correlations favouring explainable representations, functions and processing paths.

The automatic learning of higher-level concepts, and the effective mechanisms of storing, processing, and transforming them clearly forms the foundation of a strong AI that is able to memorise, recognise and to reason. I believe that much work has still to be done in this regard, and that this can only be achieved in a multi-disciplinary approach involving researchers from AI,
Machine Learning, Robotics, Computer Vision, Cognitive Science and Psychology, Neuroscience, Physics and Mathematics among others. I am keen to accept this challenge in the future, and, in the long term, I hope that we will not only be able to make significant progress towards a general AI but, more importantly, that these results will help us to better understand human intelligence and the human brain as well as the world that surrounds us.
Publications

Journals


### International Conferences and Workshops


detection in complex scenes. In Fourth International Symposium on Image and Signal

National Conferences

[48] Yiqiang Chen, Stefan Duffner, Andrei Stoian, Jean-Yves Dufour, and Atilla Baskurt. Ré-
identification de personne avec perte min-triplet. In 16e journées francophones des jeunes
chercheurs en vision par ordinateur, Colleville-sur-mer, France, June 2017.

in sport videos. In Compression et Représentation des Signaux Audiovisuels (CORESA),
Montpellier, France, November 2007.

In Compression et Représentation des Signaux Audiovisuels (CORESA), pages 29–34,

[51] S. Jehan-Besson, S. Duffner, A. Herbulot, M. Barlaud, and Aubert G. Utilisation des
gradients de forme et des contours actifs basés régions pour la segmentation des vecteurs

Book Chapters

[52] M. Everingham, A. Zisserman, C. K. I. Williams, L. Van Gool, A. Moray, C. M. Bishop,
O. Chapelle, N. Dalal, T. Deselaers, G. Dorko, S. Duffner, J. Eichhorn, J. D. R. Far-
quhar, M. Fritz, C. Garcia, T. Griffiths, F. Jurie, T. Keyser, M. Koskela, J. Laaksonen,
D. Larlus, B. Leibe, H. Meng, H. Ney, B. Schiele, C. Schmid, E. Seemann, J. Shawe-
Taylor, A. Storkey, S. Szedmak, B. Triggs, I. Ulusoy, V. Viitaniemi, , and J. Zhang. The
2005 PASCAL Visual Object Classes Challenge, Selected Proceedings of the first PASCAL

Patents

[53] C. Garcia and S. Duffner. Procédé de recadrage d’images de visage”, FR20060053734,

[54] C. Garcia and S. Duffner. Procédé de reconnaissance de visages par reconstruction croisée

[55] C. Garcia and S. Duffner. Système et procédé de localisation de points d’intérêt dans une
image d’objet mettant en œuvre un réseau de neurones, FR20050003177, US20060910159,
Other


Bibliography


Bibliography


Bibliography


